

4256 aac 25

THE
GOSPEL-MYSTERY
OF
SANCTIFICATION

Opened in

Sundry Practical DIRECTIONS,

Suited especially to the Cases of those, who labour under the Guilt and Power of IN-DWELLING SIN.

To which are added,

A Sermon on JUSTIFICATION,

And a Table of the Texts illustrated.

By the Rev. Mr. WALTER MARSHALL, *K*
Formerly Fellow of *New College, Oxford*, and afterwards Fellow of *Winchester College*.

GOD hath chosen the foolish Things of this world, to confound the Wise; and GOD hath chosen the weak Things of the World, to confound the Things which are mighty, that no Flesh might glory in his Presence. 1 Cor. i. 27.

To which is added,

A Recommendatory Preface by the late Rev. Mr. HERVEY.

THE SEVENTH EDITION.

L O N D O N :

Printed for JOSEPH JOHNSON, Bookseller and Stationer,
opposite the Monument.

M.DCC.LXI.

THE
GOSPEL-MANUSCRIPTS

SIXTH EDITION

Edited by the

ROBERTS



Printed by the

ROBERTS

Printed by the

ROBERTS

Printed by the

RECOMMENDATION

Prefixed to the

SIXTH EDITION.

TO THE

BOOKSELLER.

S I R,

IT gives me no small Pleasure to hear, that you are going to republish Mr. *Marshall's Gospel Mystery of Sanctification* *. The Instruction, Consolation, and spiritual Improvement, which I myself have received from that solid and judicious Treatise, excite in me a pleasing Hope, that it may be equally instructive and advantageous to others.

The Recommendation of it in *Theron* and *Aspasio*, with which you propose to introduce the new Edition, is at your Service. To this Proposal I consent the more readily; because Mr. *Marshall's* Book may be looked upon as no improper *Supplement* to those Dialogues and

A 2

Letters.

* It is said, by the very best Judge of Propriety in sacred Writing, *Great is the Mystery of Godliness.* 1 Tim. iii. 16. This Passage, I presume, Mr. *Marshall* had in his View, when he pitched upon a *Title* for his Book. And this Passage will render it superior to all Censure; unexceptionably just and proper.

Letters. The Author of which, intended to have closed his Plan, with a Dissertation on practical Holiness, or evangelical Obedience. But this Design was dropped; partly, on Account of his very declining Health; partly, because the Work swelled under his Hands, far beyond his Expectation.

He has been advised, once more to resume the Pen; and treat that grand Subject, with some Degree of Copiousness and Particularity. If He should be enabled to execute, what He acknowledges to be expedient, the Doctrines already discussed, and the Privileges already displayed, will furnish the principal Materials for his Essay. Justification, *free Justification*, through the Righteousness of JESUS CHRIST, is the sacred Fleece from, which He would spin his Thread, and weave his Garment. Agreeably to that important Text; *Ye are bought with a Price; therefore glorify GOD*. — If Providence, in all Things wise, and in all Things gracious, should see fit to withhold either Time or Ability, for the Accomplishment of my Purpose; I do, by these Presents, nominate and depute Mr. Marshall, to supply my Lack of Service.

Mr. Marshall expresses my Thoughts. He prosecutes my Scheme. And not only pursues

sues the same End, but proceeds in the same Way. I shall therefore rejoice in the Prospect, of having the *Gospel Mystery of Sanctification*, stand as a fourth Volume to *Theron* and *Aspasio*. Might I be allowed, without the Charge of Irreverence, to use the beautiful Images of an inspired Writer, I would with great Satisfaction say ; *If this be a Wall, that will build upon it a Palace of Ivory : If this be a Door, that will inclose it with Boards of Cedar* ^b.

Mr. *Marshall* represents *true Holiness*, as consisting in the Love of GOD, and the Love of Man ; — that unforced, unfeigned, and most rational Love of GOD, which arises from a Discovery of his unspeakable Mercy and infinite Kindness to Us ; that cordial, disinterested, and universal Love of Man, which flows from the Possession of a satisfactory and delightful Portion in the LORD JEHOVAH. These Duties, of Love to our CREATOR and our Fellow Creatures, are regarded as the Sum and Substance of the *moral Law* ; as the Fountain, from which all other good Works and every Instance of acceptable Obedience flow. Holiness, thus stated, is considered, not as the Means, but as a Part, a distinguished Part of our Salvation ; or rather, as the very cen-

tral Point, in which all the Means of Grace, and all the Ordinances of Religion terminate.

Man, in a natural State, is absolutely incapable of practising this Holiness, or enjoying this Happiness. — If you ask, what is meant by a *natural State*? It is that State, in which We are under the Guilt of Sin, and the Curse of the Law; are subject to the Power of Satan, and influenced by evil Propensities. — From this State none are released, but by being united to CHRIST; or, as the Apostle speaks, by *CHRIST dwelling in the Heart through Faith*.*

Faith, according to Mr. Marshall, is a *real Persuasion*, that GOD is pleased to give CHRIST and his Salvation; to give Him freely, without any recommending Qualifications, or preparatory Conditions; to give Him, not to some Sinners only, but to *me* a Sinner in particular. — It is likewise an *actual Receiving* of CHRIST, with all the Benefits, Privileges, and Promises of the Gospel; in Pursuance of the divine Gift, and on no other Warrant than the divine Grant. — This last Office is particularly insisted on, as an *essential* Part, or as the *principal* Act of Faith. To perform which, there is no rational, no possible Way, (our Author declares) unless we do, in some

* Eph. iii. 17.

some Measure, persuade and assure Ourselves, that CHRIST and his Salvation are ours.

As Faith is such a Persuasion of the Heart, and such a Reception of CHRIST, it assures the Soul of Salvation by *its own* Act; antecedent to all Reflection on its Fruits or Effects, on Marks or Evidences. — It assures the Soul of Acquittance from Guilt, and Reconciliation to GOD; of a Title to the everlasting Inheritance, and of Grace sufficient for every Case of Need. — By the Exercise of this Faith, and the Enjoyment of these Blessings, We are *sanctified*. Conscience is pacified, and the Heart purified. We are delivered from the Dominion of Sin; disposed to holy Tempers; and furnished for an holy Practice.

A 4

Here,

^d It is not, by this Expression, affirmed or insinuated; That We are able to produce Faith in Ourselves, by any Power of our own. This Self-Sufficiency the Author has professedly and frequently disclaimed; asserting, That “the SPIRIT of GOD habitually disposes and inclines our Hearts to a right Performance of this most important Act.” — This manner of speaking is used, I imagine, for two Reasons. To point out the first and chief Work, which We are to be doing, incessantly and assiduously, till our LORD come. To remind Us, that We must not expect to have Faith wrought in Us, by some Fatality of supernatural Operation, without any Application or Endeavour of our own: but that we must make it our diligent Endeavour, and our daily Business, to believe on CHRIST. We must labour to enter into this Rest, and shew all Diligence to the full Assurance of Hope.

Here, I apprehend, our Author will appear singular. This is the Place in which he seems to go *quite out of the common Road*. The Generality of serious People look upon those unspeakable Blessings, as the Reward of Holiness; to be received, after we have sincerely practised universal Holiness; not as necessary, *previously* necessary, to perform any Act of true Holiness. This is the Stumbling-Block, which our legal Minds, dim with Prejudice and swollen with Pride, will hardly get over. — However, these Endowments of our new State, are, in our Author's Opinion, the effectual, and the *only effectual* Expedient, to produce Sanctification. They are the *very* Method which the eternal SPIRIT has ordained, for our bringing forth those *Fruits of Righteousness, which are by JESUS CHRIST unto the Glory and Praise of GOD* *. — Whereas, if there be any Appearances of Virtue, or any Efforts of Obedience, which spring not from these Motives and Means of Practice, Mr. MARSHALL treats them as “reprobate Silver.” He cannot allow them the Character of *Gospel Holiness*.

This is the Plan, and these are the leading Sentiments, of the ensuing Treatise. To establish or defend them, is not my Aim. This is attempted, and I think executed, in the
Work

Work itself. My Aim is, only to exhibit the most distinguishing Principles, in one short Sketch; and clear Point of View. That the Reader may the more easily remember them; and by this Key, enter the more perfectly into the Writer's Meaning. — Let him that is *spiritual** judge; and reject or admit, as each Tenet shall appear, to correspond or disagree, with the infallible Word. Only let Candour, not Rigour, fill the Chair; and interpret an unguarded Expression, or a seemingly inconsistent Sentence, by the general Tenour of the Discourse.

We are not to expect much Pathos of Address, or any Delicacy of Composition. Here, the Gospel-Diamond is set, not in Gold, but in Steel. Not where it may play the most sprightly Beam, or pour a Flood of Brilliancy; but where it may do the most signal Service, and afford a Fund of Usefulness. — Neither is this Book so particularly calculated for careless insensible Sinners, as for those who are awakened into a solicitous Attention to their everlasting Interests. Who are earnestly inquiring, with the *Philippian* Jailor; *What shall I do to be saved?* Or passionately crying, in the Language of the Apostle; *O wretched Man that I am! Who shall deliver me from the Body* of

* 1 Cor. ii. 15.

† Acts xvi. 30.

of this Death^a? If there be any such, as no Doubt there are many, in the Christian World; I would say with regard to them, as the *Israelitish* Captive said, concerning her illustrious but afflicted Master. *Would GOD my Master were with the Prophet, that is in Samaria; for he would recover Him of his Leprosy*¹. O that such Persons were acquainted with the Doctrines, and influenced by the Directions, contained in this Treatise! They would, under the divine Blessing, recover them from their Distress; and restore them to Tranquillity; they would *comfort their Hearts, and thereby establish them in every good Word and Work*^k.

But I am going to anticipate, what the following Extract speaks. I shall therefore only add my hearty Wishes, that you may meet with Encouragement and Success, in the Publication of this truly valuable Piece. Since there is, in this Instance, an evident Connexion between your private Interest and the general Good; I think, you may promise yourself the Approbation and Acceptance of the Publick; as you will assuredly have all the Support and Assistance, that can be given by, Sir,

Your humble Servant,

Weston Favel, near
Northampton,

Nov. 5, 1756.

JAMES HERVEY.

“ It

^a Rom. vii. 24. ¹ 2 Kings v. 3. ^k 2 Thess. xi. 17.

“ It is with great Pleasure, and without any
 “ Diffidence, that I refer my Readers to
 “ Mr. *MARSHALL*’s Treatise ON SANC-
 “ TIFICATION. Which I shall not re-
 “ commend in the Style of a CRITIC, nor
 “ like a Person of TASTE, but with all the
 “ Simplicity of the *weakest* Christian : I mean
 “ from *my own* Experience. It has been made
 “ one of the *most useful* Books to my own
 “ Heart. I scarce ever fail to receive spiri-
 “ tual Consolation and Strength from the
 “ Perusal of it. And was I to be banished
 “ into some desolate Island, possessed only
 “ of *two* Books besides my BIBLE, this
 “ should be *one* of the Two, perhaps *the*
 “ *first* that I would choose.

“ Should any Person, hitherto a Stranger
 “ to the work, purchase it on this Recom-
 “ mendation, I must desire to suggest one
 “ Caution—That he be not surprized, if, in
 “ the Beginning, he meets with something
 “ new, and quite out of the *common Road* :
 “ Or, if surprized, that he would not be
 “ offended, but calmly and attentively pro-
 “ ceed.—He will find the Author’s Design
 “ opening itself by Degrees. He will dis-
 “ cern more and more the Propriety of his
 “ Method. And what might, at the first
 “ View,

“ View, appear like a Stumbling-Block,
 “ will prove to be a fair and ample Avenue
 “ —to the Palace of *Truth* — to the Temple
 “ of *Holiness* — and to the Bowers of *Hap-*
 “ *pinefs.*”

See the third Edition of HERVEY's *Theron and Aspasio*;
 Vol. III. pag. 336.

To the former Editions were prefixed
 several Recommendations.

The first of them is signed by *N. N.* and
 dated *July 21, 1692.* Importing “ That
 “ *Mr. WALTER MARSHALL* (the Au-
 “ thor of these DIRECTIONS) was edu-
 “ cated in new College *Oxford*, was a Fellow
 “ of the said College, and afterwards chosen
 “ a Fellow of the College at *Winchester* —
 “ From thence He removed to *Gosport* in
 “ *Hampshire* — Having been much exer-
 “ cised, and for many Years, with troubled
 “ Thoughts; He had, by many mortifying
 “ Methods, sought Peace of Conscience; but,
 “ notwithstanding all, his Troubles still in-
 “ creased. Whereupon He consulted several
 “ eminent Divines, who told Him, He
 “ understood the Scriptures too legally.
 “ Upon giving one of them an Account of
 “ the State of his Soul, and particularizing
 “ his Sins, which lay heavy on his Con-
 “ science,

“ science, the Divine told Him ; He had for-
 “ got to mention *the greatest Sin of all*, the
 “ Sin of *Unbelief*, in not believing on the
 “ Lord JESUS CHRIST for Remission
 “ of his Sins and Sanctification of his Na-
 “ ture. — Hereupon He set himself to *stu-*
 “ *dying* and *preaching* CHRIST ; and attain-
 “ ed to eminent Holiness, and great Peace
 “ of Conscience.”

Mr. MARSHALL's dying Words were,
The Wages of Sin is Death, but the Gift of
GOD is eternal Life thro' JESUS CHRIST
our Lord ; “ having just before said to those
 “ about Him, that He now died *in the full*
 “ *Persuasion of the Truth, and in the Com-*
 “ *fort of that Doctrine which He had preach-*
 “ *ed.* — The Sum of which is contained in
 “ this Treatise on Sanctification : where we
 “ have the profound Experience of a studious
 “ and holy Man, coming from his very
 “ Heart. The whole savours of no party,
 “ nor prosecutes any narrow design ; but
 “ aims at the Cultivation of holiness, and
 “ the Establishment of happiness.”

A new Recommendation was prefixed
 to the Edition published in 1733, and signed
 by six judicious Ministers, importing ; “ That
 “ they had perused the Book, with great
 “ Edi-

“ Edification and no small Pleasure ; that
 “ they judged the Publication very season-
 “ able for promoting practical Religion and
 “ Godliness, and for giving a just View of
 “ the great Difference there is between the
 “ Morality of the Heathens (tho’ adorned
 “ with the finest Touches of human Rhe-
 “ torick) and true Gospel Holiness, without
 “ which St. *Paul* has declared, no Man shall
 “ see the Lord. — This their united Opinion
 “ is corroborated by the Testimony of Mr.
 “ *Robert Trail* of *London*.

“ I think (says that evangelical Writer)
 “ Mr. *MARSHALL*’s Treatise on the
 “ Mystery of Sanctification by Faith in
 “ JESUS CHRIST, is such a Vindication
 “ and Confirmation of that protestant Doc-
 “ trine, against which I fear no *effectual*
 “ Opposition. Mr. *MARSHALL* was a
 “ holy and retired Man, known to the
 “ World only by this Book ; which is deep,
 “ practical, and well connected — requiring
 “ a more than ordinary Attention to read it
 “ with Profit. — And if it be *attentively* used,
 “ I look upon it to be one of the *most useful*
 “ Books the Publick has seen for many Years.
 “ It’s Excellence is, that it leads the serious
 “ Reader directly to JESUS CHRIST, cut-
 “ ting the Sinews and overturning the Foun-
 “ dations

“dations of the new and fashionable Divi-
 “nity, by the same Argument of Gospel
 “Holiness by which many attempt to over-
 “turn the old and scriptural Divinity.”—

Another Recommendation of this Au-
 thor, by Mr. *Gib* of *Edinburgh*, was prefixed
 to the Edition published *Dec. 31, 1744*,
 wherein He observes, “That among the
 “Professors of a religious Course, there are
 “two Sorts, the first of them still adhere
 “to a *legal* Scheme of Holiness, vainly ma-
 “king *That*, and not CHRIST JESUS,
 “the Reason of their Peace and Hope —
 “while the other Sort are reconciled to
 “the *Evangelical* Scheme of Holiness, ma-
 “king Holiness and Obedience the Result of
 “their Peace and Hope, as already founded
 “on CHRIST, freely offered to them in
 “the Gospel.

“The CORRECTION which the first
 “of these Sorts ought to have, and the
 “INSTRUCTION in RIGHTE-
 “OUSNESS which *both* of them need,
 “may be had in a peculiar Manner from this
 “Book : and for these Purposes they are
 “earnestly entreated to read it, not *in Parts*
 “but *completely*, and in the *same Order*, in
 “which it is written : That so the LEGAL
 “Readers

“ Readers may not, from looking first into
 “ the *latter* Part, throw it aside as *Anti-*
 “ *nomian*; nor the EVANGELICAL
 “ Readers, from looking only into the
 “ *former* Part, throw it aside as *too Legal*. —
 “ In short; I despair, that any should
 “ reap true Benefit from a partial, or confus-
 “ ed Reading; but *firmly* believe, that from
 “ an attentive and regular Perusal, excellent
 “ Fruit may be gathered; since no Author
 “ appears to be better acquainted with the
 “ State and Working of the human Heart,
 “ or with the Peculiarities and Riches of the
 “ Christian Dispensation.

THE C O N T E N T S.

	Pag.
DIRECTION I.	
<i>To perform duties required in the law, first, learn the effectual means to attain so great an end</i>	I
DIRECTION II.	
<i>Four endowments and qualifications necessary : (1.) An Inclination and propensity of heart thereunto. (2.) A persuasion of our reconciliation with God. (3.) A persuasion of our enjoyment of everlasting happiness. (4.) A persuasion of sufficient strength both to will and perform duties acceptably</i>	14
DIRECTION III.	
<i>The way to get these endowments to enable for practice, is, to receive them from CHRIST'S fulness by union and fellowship with him</i>	39
DIRECTION IV.	
<i>The means or instruments of this union and all fellowship, are, the gospel, and faith. What faith is</i>	58
DIRECTION V.	
<i>We cannot attain holiness by our endeavours in a natural state, without union and fellowship with Christ</i>	77
E	DIREC-

DIRECTION VI.

Those that endeavour sincere obedience, as the condition to procure a right and title to salvation, and as a ground to trust on Christ, do seek salvation by the works of the law 94

DIRECTION VII.

We are not to imagine that our hearts and lives must be changed from sin to holiness in any measure, before we may trust on Christ 128

DIRECTION VIII.

Seek for holiness only in its due order, after union, justification, and the gift of the Holy Ghost; and by faith 143

DIRECTION IX.

We must first receive the comforts of the gospel, that we may perform the duties of the law 151

DIRECTION X.

That we may, by gospel-comforts, perform duties of the law, we must get assurance in that very faith whereby we receive Christ 164

DIRECTION XI.

Believe on Christ in a right manner without delay and then continue and increase in faith: that so enjoyment of Christ, and union and fellowship with him, and all holiness by him, may be begun, continued, and increased 199

DIRECTION XII.

Diligently use faith for performance of the duties of the law, by walking no longer according to your old

C O N T E N T S. xix

old state principles, or means of practice; but, only according to that new state you receive by faith, and its principles and means of practice 238

D I R E C T I O N XIII.

Make a right use of all means appointed in the word, for obtaining and practising holiness, only in this way of believing and walking in Christ according to your new state 277

D I R E C T I O N XIV.

That you may thus seek holiness only by believing and walking in Christ, take encouragement from the great advantages of this way, and the excellent properties of it 329

The sermon on justification 346

15 SE 62

THE
GOSPEL MYSTERY
OF
SANCTIFICATION.

DIRECTION I.

That we may acceptably perform the duties of holiness and righteousness required in the law, our first work is, to learn the powerful and effectual means whereby we may attain to so great an end.

EXPLICATION.

THIS direction may serve, instead of a preface, to prepare the understanding and attention of the reader for those that follow. And,

First, It acquainteth you with the great end for which all those means are designed, that are the principal subject to be here treated of. The scope of all is, to teach you how you may attain to that practice and manner of life which we call *holiness, righteousness, or godliness, obedience, true religion*; and which God requireth of us in the law, particularly in the moral law summed up in the Ten Commandments, and more briefly in those two great commandments of love to God and our neighbour^a,

B

and

^a Matth. xxii. 37, 39.

and more largely explained throughout the holy scriptures. My work is, to shew how the duties of this law may be done, when they are known : therefore expect not that I should delay my intent, to help you to the knowledge of them, by any large exposition of them ; which is a work already performed in several catechisms and commentaries. Yet, that you may not miss the mark for want of discerning it, take notice in few words, that the holiness which I would bring you to, is *spiritual*^b. It consists not only in external works of piety and charity, but in the holy thoughts, imaginations, and affections of the soul, and chiefly in love ; from whence all other good works must flow, or else they are not acceptable to God : not only in refraining the execution of sinful lusts, but in longing and delighting to do the will of God, and in a chearful obedience to God, without repining, fretting, grudging at any duty, as if it were a grievous yoke and burden to you.

Take notice further, that the law which is your mark, is *exceeding broad*^c, and yet not the more easy to be hit ; because you must aim to hit it, in every duty of it, with a performance of equal breadth, or else you cannot hit it at all^d. The Lord is not at all loved with that love that is due to him as lord of all, if he be not loved with all our heart, spirit, and might. We are to love every thing in him, his justice, holiness, sovereign authority, all-seeing eye, and all his decrees, commands, judgments, and all his doings. We are to love him not only better than other things, but singly, as only good, the fountain of all goodness ; and to reject all fleshly and worldly enjoy-

^b Rom. vii. 14. ^c Psal. cxix. 96. ^d Jam. ii. 10.

enjoyments, even our own lives, as if we hated them, when they stand in competition with our enjoyment of him, or our duty toward him. We must love him so as to yield ourselves wholly up to his constant service in all things, and to his disposal of us as our absolute lord, whether it be for prosperity or adversity, life or death. And for his sake, we are to love our neighbour, even all men, whether they be friends or foes to us; and so do to them in all things that concern their honour, life, chastity, worldly wealth, credit, and content, whatever we would that men should do to us in the like condition*. This spiritual universal obedience is the great end, to the attainment whereof I am directing you. And, that you may not reject mine enterprize as impossible, observe, that the most I promise, is no more than an acceptable performance of these duties of the law, such as our gracious and merciful God will certainly delight in, and be pleased with, during our state of imperfection in this world, and such as will end in perfection of holiness, and all happiness, in the world to come.

Before I proceed further, stay your thoughts a while in the contemplation of the great dignity and excellency of these duties of the law, that you may aim at the performance of them as your end, with so high an esteem as may cast an amiable lustre upon the ensuing discovery of the means. The principal duties of love to God above all, and to each other for his sake, from whence all the other duties flow, are so excellent, that I cannot imagine any more noble work for the holy Angels in their glorious sphere. They are the chief works for which we were

at first framed in the image of God, engraven upon man in the first creation, and for which that beautiful image is renewed upon us in our new creation and sanctification by Jesus Christ, and shall be perfected in our glorification. They are works which depend not merely on the sovereignty of the will of God, to be commanded or forbidden, or left indifferent, or changed, or abolished at his pleasure, as other works that belong either to the judicial or ceremonial law, or to the means of salvation prescribed by the gospel: but they are, in their own nature, *holy, just, and good*^f, and meet for us to perform, because of our natural relation to our Creator and fellow-creatures; so that they have an inseparable dependence upon the holiness of the will of God, and an indispensable establishment thereby. They are works sufficient to render the performers *holy in all manner of conversation*, by the fruits which they bring forth, if no other duties had ever been commanded; and by which the performance of all other duties is sufficiently established as soon as they are commanded; and without which there can be no holiness of heart and life imagined; and to which it was one great honour of Mosaical, and is now of Evangelical ordinances, to be subservient for the performance of them, as means, which shall cease when their end, this never failing charity, is perfectly attained^g. They are duties which we were naturally obliged to, by that reason and understanding which God gave to man at his first creation, to discern what was just and meet for him to do, and to which even Heathens are still obliged by the light of nature, without any written law, or supernatural
reve-

^f Rom. vii. 12.^g 1 Cor. xiii.

revelation^h. Therefore they are called *natural religion*; and the law that requireth them, is called the *natural law*, and also the *moral law*; because the manners of all men, Infidels, as well as Christians, ought to be conformed to it, and, if they had been fully conformable, they would not have come short of eternal happinessⁱ, under the penalty of the wrath of God for the violation of it. This is the true morality which God approveth of, consisting in a conformity of all our Actions to the moral law. And, if those that, in these days, contend so highly for morality, do understand no other than this, I dare join with them in asserting, that the best morally honest man is the greatest saint; and that morality is the principal part of the religion, and the test of all other parts, without which faith is dead, and all other religious performances are a vain shew, and mere hypocrisy: for the *faithful and true witness* hath testified, concerning the two great moral Commandments of love to God, and our neighbour, that there is none other commandment greater than these, and that on them hang all the law and the prophets^k.

The *second* thing contained in this introductory direction, is the necessity of learning the powerful and effectual means, whereby this great and excellent end may be accomplished, and of making this the first work to be done, before we can expect success in any attempt for the attainment of it.

This is an advertisement very needful; because many are apt to skip over the lesson concerning the means (that will fill up this whole Treatise) as su-

B 3

perfluous

^h Rom. ii. 14, 15. ⁱ Matt. v. 19. Luke x. 27, 28.

^k Matth. xxii. 6, 38, 39, 40. - Mark xii. 31.

perfluous and ufeless. When once they know the nature and excellency of the duties of the law, they account nothing wanting but diligent performances; and they rufh blindly upon immediate practice, making more hafte than good fpeed. They are quick in promifing; ¹ *All that the Lord hath fpoken, we will do*, without fitting down and counting the coft. They look upon holinefs as only the means of an end, eternal falvation; not as an end itfelf, requiring any great means for attaining the practice of it. The inquiry of moft, when they begin to have a fenfe of religion, is, *What good thing fhall I do, that I may have eternal life* ^m? not, How fhall I be enabled to do any thing that is good? Yea many that are accounted powerful preachers, fpend all their zeal in the earneft preffing the immediate practice of the law, without any difcovery of the effectual means of performance; as if the works of righteoufnefs were like thofe fervile employments that need no fkill and artifice at all, but induftry and activity. That you may not fumble at the threshold of a religious life by this common oversight, I fhall endeavour to make you fenfible, that it is not enough for you to know the matter and reafon of your duty, but that you are alfo to learn the powerful and effectual means of performance, before you can fuccesfully apply yourfelves to immediate practice. And, for this end, I fhall lay before you the confiderations following.

1^{ft}, We are all, by nature, void of all ftrength and ability to perform acceptably that holinefs and righteoufnefs which the law requireth, and are *dead in trefpaffes and fins, and children of wrath*, by the fin of our
first

¹ Exod. xix. 8.

^m Matth. xix. 16.

first father Adam, as the scripture witnesseth ^a. This doctrine of original sin, which Protestants generally profess, is a firm basis and ground-work to the assertion now to be proved, and to many other assertions in this whole discourse. If we believe it to be true, we cannot rationally encourage ourselves to attempt a holy practice, until we are acquainted with some powerful and effectual means to enable us for it. While man continued upright, in the image of God, as he was at first created^o, he could do the will of God sincerely as soon as he knew it; but, when he was fallen, he was quickly afraid, because of his nakedness; but could not help it at all, until God discovered to him the means of restoration^p. Say to a strong healthy servant, Go, and he goeth; Come, and he cometh; Do this, and he doeth it; but a bed-ridden servant must know first how he may be enabled. No doubt the fallen angels know the necessity of holiness, and tremble at the guilt of their sin; but they know of no means for them to attain to holiness effectually, and so continue still in their wickedness. It was in vain for Sampson to say, *I will go out as at other times before, and shake myself*, when he had sinned away his strength^q. Men shew themselves strangely forgetful or hypocritical, in professing original sin in their prayers, catechisms, and confessions of faith; and yet urging upon themselves and others, the practice of the law, without the consideration of any strengthening, enlivening means; as if there were no want of ability, but only of activity.

B 4

2dly,

^a Rom. v. 12, 15, 18, 19. Eph. ii. 1, 2, 3.
 Rom. 8.iii. 7, 8. ^o Eccles. vii. 29. Gen. i. 27.
^p Gen. iii. 10, 15. ^q Judges xvi. 20.

2dly, Those that doubt of, or deny the doctrine of original sin, may all of them know concerning themselves, (if their conscience be not blind,) that the exact justice of God is against them, and they are under the curse of God, and sentence of death, for their actual sins, if God should enter into judgment with them^r. Is it possible for a man that knoweth this to be his case, and hath not learned any means of getting out of it, to practise the law immediately? to love God, and every thing in him, his justice, holiness, power, as well as his mercy, and to yield himself willingly to the disposal of God, though God should inflict sudden death upon him? Is there no skill or artifice at all required in this case, to encourage the fainting soul to the practice of universal obedience?

3dly, Though Heathens might know much of the work of the law by the common light of natural reason and understanding^s, yet the effectual means of performance cannot be discovered by that light, and therefore are wholly to be learned by the teaching of supernatural revelation. For what is our natural light, but some sparks and glimmerings of that which was in Adam before the fall? and, even then, in its brightest meridian, it was not sufficient to direct Adam, how to recover ability to walk holily, if once he should lose it by sin; nor to assure him before-hand, that God would vouchsafe to him any means of recovery. God hath set nothing but death before his eyes in case of transgression^t, and therefore he hid himself from God, when the shame of his nakedness appeared, as expecting no favour from him. We are like sheep gone astray, and know not which way

^r Rom. i. 32. ii. 2. & iii. 9. Gal. iii. 10.

^s Rom. ii. 14. ^t Gen. ii. 17.

way to return, until we hear the shepherd's voice. Can these dry bones live to God in holiness? O Lord, thou knowest, and we cannot know it, except we learn it of thee.

4thly, Sanctification, whereby our hearts and lives are conformed to the law, is a grace of God communicated to us by means, as well as justification; and by means of teaching and learning something that we cannot see without the word^u. There are several things pertaining to life and godliness, that are given through knowledge^w. There is a form of doctrine made use of by God, to make people free from sin, and servants of righteousness^x. And there are several pieces of the whole armour of God necessary to be known and put on, that we may stand against sin and Satan in the evil day^y. Shall we slight and overlook the way of sanctification, when the learning the way of justification hath been accounted worth so many elaborate treatises?

5thly, God hath given, in the holy scriptures, by his inspiration, plentiful instruction in righteousness, *that we may be thoroughly furnished for every good work^z*, especially since *the day-spring from on high hath visited us*, by the appearance of the Lord Jesus Christ, *to guide our feet in the way of peace^a*. If God condescend to us very low, to teach us this way in the scriptures, and by Christ himself, it must needs be greatly necessary for us, to sit down at his feet, and learn it.

6thly, The way of attaining to godliness is so far from being known without learning out of the holy scriptures, that, when it is here plainly revealed, we cannot

^u Acts xxvi. 17, 18. ^w 2 Pet. i. 2, 3. ^x Rom. vi. 17, 18. ^y Eph. vi. 13. ^z 2 Tim. iii. 16. 17. ^a Luke i. 78, 79.

cannot learn it so easily as the duties of the law : which are known in part by the light of nature, and therefore more easily assented to. It is the way whereby the dead are brought to live unto God ; and therefore doubtless it is far above all the thoughts and conjectures of human wisdom. It is the way to salvation, wherein God will *destroy the wisdom of the wise, and bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent*, by discovering things by his Spirit, that *the natural man receiveth not : for they are foolishness to him, neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned^b*. Without controversy, great is the mystery of godliness^c. The learning of it requireth double work ; because we must unlearn many of our former deeply-rooted notions, and become fools, that we may be wise. We must pray earnestly to the Lord to teach us, as well as search the scriptures, that we may get this knowledge. " O that my ways were directed to
 " keep thy statutes ! Teach me, O Lord, the way
 " of thy statutes, and I shall keep it unto the end^d.
 " Teach me to do thy will^e. The Lord direct your
 " hearts unto the love of God^f." Surely these saints did not so much want teaching and direction concerning the duties of the law to be done, as concerning the way and means whereby they might do them.

7thly, The certain knowledge of these powerful and effectual means, is of greatest importance and necessity for our establishment in the true faith, and avoiding errors contrary thereunto : for we cannot rationally doubt, that the moral duties of love to God and our neighbour are absolutely necessary to true religion,

^b 1 Cor. i. 19. 21. & ii. 14.

^c 1 Tim. iii. 16.

^d Psal. cxix. 5, 33.

^e Psal. cxliii. 10.

^f 2 Thess. iii. 5.

religion, so that it cannot subsist without them. And, from this principle, we may firmly conclude, that nothing repugnant to the practice of these holy duties, ought to be received as a point of faith delivered to us by the most holy God; and that whatsoever is truly necessary, powerful and effectual to bring us to the practice of them, ought to be believed as proceeding from God, because it hath the image of his holiness and righteousness engraven upon it. This is a sure test and touchstone, which those that are seriously religious will use, to try spirits and their doctrines, whether they be of God or no: and they cannot rationally approve any doctrine as religious, that is not according to godliness^a. By this touchstone Christ proveth his doctrine to be of God, because therein he seeketh the glory of God^b. And he teacheth us to know false prophets by their fruits^c, wherein the fruits which their doctrine tendeth unto, are especially to be considered. Hence it appeareth, that, until we know what are the effectual means of holiness, and what not, we want a necessary touchstone of divine truth, and may be easily deceived by false doctrine, or brought to live in mere suspense concerning the truth of any religion, like the seekers. And, if you mistake, and think those means to be effectual that are not, and those that are effectual to be weak, or of a contrary effect, your error in this will be a false touchstone to try other doctrines, whereby you will readily approve of errors, and refuse the truth; which hath been a pernicious occasion of many errors in religion in late days. Get but a true touchstone, by learning this lesson, and you will be able to
try

^a 1 Tim. vi. 3. ^b John vii. 17, 18. ^c Matth. vii. 15, 16.

try the various doctrines of Protestants, Papists, Arminians, Socinians, Antinomians, Quakers; and to discover the truth, and cleave to it, with much satisfaction to your judgment, amongst all the janglings and controversies of these times. Hereby you may discover whether the Protestant religion established among us, have in it any sinews of Antinomianism; whether it be guilty of any insufferable defect in practical principles, and deserves to be altered, and turned almost upside down, with new doctrines and methods; as some learned men in late times have judged by their touchstones.

8thly, It is also of great importance and necessity for our establishment in holy practice: for we cannot apply ourselves to the practice of holiness with hope of success, except we have some faith concerning the divine assistance; which we have no ground to expect, if we use not such means as God hath appointed to work by. "God meeteth them that remember him in his own ways^k, and makes a breach upon them that seek him not after the due order^l." He hath chosen and ordained such means of sanctification and salvation as are for his own glory, and those only he blesteth to us; and he crowneth no man that striveth, except he *strive lawfully*^m. Experience sheweth plentifully, both of Heathens and Christians, how pernicious ignorance, or mistaking of these effectual means, is to an holy practice. The Heathens generally fell short of an acceptable performance of those duties of the law which they knew, because of their ignorance in this point. (1) Many Christians content themselves with external performances,

^k Isa. lxiv. 5. ^l 1 Chron. xv. 23. ^m 2 Tim. ii. 5.

ances, because they never knew how they might attain to spiritual service. (2) And many reject the way of holiness as austere and unpleasant, because they know not how to cut off a right hand, or pluck out a right eye, without intolerable pain; whereas they would find *the ways of wisdom* (if they knew them) *to be ways of pleasantness, and all her paths to be peace*^a. This occasioneth the putting off repentance from time to time, as an uncouth thing. (3) Many others set upon the practice of holiness with a fervent zeal, and run very fast; but tread not a step in the right way; and finding themselves frequently disappointed and overcome by their lusts, they at last give over the work, and turn to wallow again in the mire: which hath occasioned several treatises, to shew how far a reprobate may go in the way of religion; whereby many weak saints are discouraged, accounting that these reprobates have gone further than themselves; whereas most of them never knew the right way, nor trod one step aright in it; for *few there be that find it*^b. (4) Some of these ignorant zealots do inhumanly macerate their bodies with fasting and other austerities, to kill their lusts; and when they see their lusts are still too hard for them, they fall into despair, and are driven, by horror of conscience, to make away themselves wickedly, to the scandal of religion. Peradventure God may bless my discovery of the powerful means of holiness so far, as to save some one or other from killing themselves. And such a fruit as this would countervail my labour; tho' I hope God will enlarge the hearts of many, by it, to run

^a Prov. iii, 17.^b Matth. vi.

run with great chearfulness, joy, and thanksgiving, in the ways of his commandments.

D I R E C T I O N II.

Several endowments and qualifications are necessary to enable us for the immediate practice of the law. Particularly, we must have an inclination and propensity of our hearts thereunto; and therefore we must be well persuaded of our reconciliation with God, and of our future enjoyment of the everlasting heavenly happiness, and of sufficient strength both to will and perform all duties acceptably, until we come to the enjoyment of that happiness.

E X P L I C A T I O N.

THOSE means that are next to the attainment of the great end aimed at, are first to be discovered, that we may learn how to get them by other means expressed in the following directions. Therefore I have named here several qualifications and endowments that are necessary to make up that holy frame and state of the soul, whereby it is furnished and enabled to practise the law immediately; and that not only in the beginning, but in the continuation of that practice. And therefore note diligently, that these endowments must continue in us during the present life, or else our ability for a holy life will be lost; and they must be before practice, not in any distance of time, but only as the cause is before the effect. I do not say, that I have named particularly all such necessary qualifications; but this much I dare say, that he that gaineth these, may by the same means gain any other that should be ranked with

with them. And this is a matter worthy of our serious consideration ; for few understand that any special endowments are required to furnish us for a holy practice, more than for other voluntary actions. The first Adam had excellent endowments bestowed upon him for a holy practice, when he was first created according to the image of God ; and the second Adam had endowments more excellent, to enable him for a harder task of obedience. And, seeing obedience is grown more difficult, by reason of the opposition and temptations that it meeteth with since the fall of Adam, we that are to be imitators of Christ, had need have very choice endowments, as Christ had ; at least as good, or something better than Adam had at first, as our work is harder than his. “ What king going to make war against “ another king, sitteth not down first, and consult- “ eth whether he be able, with ten thousand, to “ meet him that cometh against him with twenty “ thousand ? ” And shall we dare to rush into battle against all the powers of darkness, all wordly terrors and allurements, and our own inbred domineering corruptions, without considering whether we have sufficient spiritual furniture to stand in the evil day ? Yet many content themselves with such an ability to will and do their duty, as they would have to be given to men universally ; whereby they are no better enabled for the spiritual battle, than the generality of the world, that lie vanquished under the wicked one ; and therefore their standing is not at all secured by it. It is a hard matter to find what this universal ability is, that so many contend so earnestly for, of what it consisteth, by what means it is conveyed to us, and maintained.

Bodily

Bodily agility hath spirits, nerves, ligaments, bones, to subsist by ; but this spiritual universal ability seemeth to be some occult quality, that no sufficient account can be given how it is conveyed, or of what it is constituted. That none may deceive themselves, and miscarry in their enterprizes for holiness, by depending on such a weak occult quality, I have here shewed **FOUR ENDOWMENTS**, of which a true ability for the practice of holiness must necessarily be constituted, and by which it must subsist and be maintained ; intending to shew afterwards, by what means they are given unto us, and whether the inclination or propensity here mentioned be perfect or imperfect. And they are of such a mysterious nature, that some who own the necessity of endowments to frame them for holiness, are prone to think, that less than these will serve ; and that some of these frame us rather for licentiousness than holiness, as they are here placed before any actual performance of the moral law ; and that some things contrary to them, would put us into a better frame for holiness. Against all such surmises, I shall endeavour such a demonstration of these endowments particularly, as may gain the assent of right reason ; insisting on them in the same order wherein I have placed them in the direction.

In the **FIRST** place, I assert, that an *inclination and propensity of heart to the duties of the law*, is necessary to frame and enable us for the immediate practice of them. And I mean not such a blind propensity as inanimate creatures and brutes have to their natural operations, but such an one as is meet for intelligent creatures, whereby they are, by the conduct

duct of reason, prone and bent to approve and chuse their duty, and averse to the practise of sin: and therefore I have intimated, that the three other endowments, mentioned in the direction, are subservient to this, as the chief of all: which are sufficient to make it a rational propensity. This is contrary to those, that, out of zeal for obedience, but not according to knowledge, contend so earnestly for free-will as a necessary and sufficient endowment to enable us to perform our duty, when once we are convinced of it, and of our obligation to it; and that extol this endowment as the greatest benefit that universal redemption hath blessed all mankind with; tho' they consider this free-will without any actual inclination to good; yea, they cannot but acknowledge, that in most of mankind that have it, it is incumbered with an actual bent and propensity of the heart altogether to evil. Such a free-will as this is, can never free us from slavery to sin and satan, and fit us for the practise of the law; and therefore is not worthy the pains of those that contend so warmly for it. Neither is the will so free as is necessary for the practise of holiness, until it be endued with an inclination and propensity thereunto; as may appear by the following arguments.

First, The duties of the law are of such a nature, that they cannot possibly be performed while there is wholly an aversion or mere indifferency of the heart to the performance of them, and no good inclination and propensity towards the practise of them; because the chief of all the commandments is, to love the Lord with our whole heart, might, and soul, to love every thing that is in him, to love his will and all his ways, and to like them as good. And all duties

must be influenced, in their performance, by this love: we must delight to do the will of God; it must be sweeter to us than the honey or honey-comb^p. And this love, liking, delight, longing, thirsting, sweet-relishing, must be continued to the end; and the first indeliberate motion of lust must be regulated by love to God and our neighbour; and sin must be lusted against^q, and abhorred^r. If it were true obedience, (as some would have it) to love our duty only as a market man loveth foul ways to the market, or as a sick man loveth an unpleasant medicinal potion, or as a captive slave loveth his hard work for fear of a greater evil; then it might be performed with averfeness, or want of inclination: but we must love it as the market man gain, as the sick man health, as pleasant meat and drink, as the captive liberty. Doubtless, there can be no power in the will for this kind of service, without an agreeableness of our inclination to the will of God, a heart according to his own heart, an aversion of our hearts from sin, and a kind of antipathy against sin: for we know the proverb, *Like loveth like*. There must be an agreeableness in the person or thing beloved, to the disposition of the lover. *Love to God must flow from a clean heart^s*, a heart cleansed from evil propensities and inclinations. And reason will tell us, that the first motions of lust, which fall not under our choice and deliberation, cannot be avoided without a fixed propensity of the heart to holiness.

Secondly, The image of God (wherein God, according to his infinite wisdom, judged it meet to frame the first Adam in righteousness, and true holiness, and

^p Psal. xl. 8. Job xxiii. 12. Psal. lxiii. 1. cxix. 20, & xix. 10. ^q Gal. v. 17. ^r Psal. xxxvi. 4. ^s 1 Tim. i. 5.

and uprightness ¹) consisted in an actual bent and propensity of heart to the practice of holiness: not in a mere power of will to chuse good or evil; for this in itself is neither holy nor unholy, but only a groundwork, on which either the image of God or of satan may be drawn: nor in an indifference of propensity to the choice of sin or duty; for this is a wicked disposition in an intelligent creature, that knoweth his duty, and fitteth us only to halt between God and Baal. God set Adam's soul at first wholly in a right bent and inclination, tho' Adam might act contrary to it, if he would; as we may be prevailed upon to do some things contrary to our natural or rational inclinations: and it is easy to fail of our duty, though great preparation and furniture be required for the performance of it. The second Adam also, the Lord Jesus Christ was born a holy thing ², with a holy disposition of his soul, and propensity to goodness. And can we reasonably hope to arise to the life of holiness, from which the first Adam fell, or to be imitators of Christ, since duty is made so difficult by the fall, if we be not renewed in a measure according to the same image of God, and enabled with such a propensity and inclination?

Thirdly, Original corruption (whereby we are dead to God and godliness from the birth, and made willing slaves to the performances of all actual sins, until the son of God make us free) consisteth in a propensity and inclination of the heart to sin, and averfeness to holiness. Without this propensity to sin, what can that *law of sin in our members* be, that *warreth against the law of our mind, and leadeth us*

C 2

captive

¹ Gen. i. 27. Eph. iv. 24. Eccl. vii. 29. ² Luke i. 35.

captive to the service of sin ^w? what is that poison in us, for which men may be called serpents, vipers? what is that spirit of whoredoms in men, by reason of which they will not frame their doings to turn to God ^x? how is the tree first corrupt, and then its fruit corrupt ^y? how can man be said to be *abominable and filthy*, that *drinketh iniquity like water* ^z? how should the *mind of the flesh be continual enmity to the law of God* ^a? I know there is also a blindness of understanding, and other things, belonging to original corruption, which conduce to this evil propensity of the will: but yet this propensity itself is the great evil, the indwelling sin which produceth all actual sins; and must of necessity be removed or restrained, by restoring that contrary inclination, wherein the image of God consisted; or else we shall be backward and reprobate to every good work, and whatever freedom the will hath, it shall be employed only in the service of sin.

Fourthly, God restoreth his people to holiness, by giving to them “a new heart, and a new spirit, and “taking away the heart of stone out of the flesh, “and giving them a heart of flesh ^b, and he circumciseth their heart to love him with their whole “heart and soul.” And he requireth, that we should be transformed *in the renewing of our mind, that we may prove what is his acceptable will* ^c. And David prayeth, for the same end, “that God would create “in him a clean heart, and renew a right spirit within him ^d.” If any one can judge, that this new, clean, circumcised heart, this heart of flesh, this new right

^w Rom. vii. 23.

^x Hof. v. 4.

^y Matt. xii. 33.

^z Job xv. 16.

^a Rom. viii. 7.

^b Ezek. xxxvi. 26, 27.

^c Rom. xii. 2.

^d Psal. li. 10.

right spirit, is such an one, as hath no actual inclination and propensity to good, but only a power to chuse good or evil, undeservedly called *free-will*, with a present inclination to evil, or an indifference of propensity to both contraries, it will not be worth my labour to convince such a judgment : only let him consider, whether David, could account such a heart to be clean and right, when he prayed^e, “ Incline
“ mine heart unto thy testimonies, and not to covetousness.”

The SECOND ENDOWMENT, necessary to enable us for the immediate practice of holiness, and concurring with the other two that follow, to work in us a rational *propensity* to this practice, is, that *we be well persuaded of our reconciliation with God*. We must reckon, that the breach of amity which sin hath made between God and us, is made up by a firm reconciliation to his love and favour. And herein I include the great benefit of justification, as the means whereby we are reconciled to God, which is described in scripture, either by forgiving our sins, or by the imputation of righteousness to us^f, because both are contained in one and the same justifying act ; as one act of illumination comprehends expulsion of darkness, and introduction of light ; one act of repentance containeth mortification of sin, and vivification to righteousness ; and every motion from any thing to its contrary, is but one and the same, though it may be expressed by divers names, with respect to either of the two contrary terms, the one of which is abolished, the other introduced by

C 3

it.

^e Psal. cxix. 36^f Rom. iv. 5, 6, 7.

it. This is a great mystery, (contrary to the apprehensions, not only of the vulgar, but of some learned divines,) that we must be reconciled to God, and justified by the remission of our sins, and imputation of righteousness, before any sincere obedience to the law, that we may be enabled for the practice of it. They account that this doctrine tendeth to the subversion of a holy practice, and is a great pillar of Antinomianism; and that the only way to establish sincere obedience, is to make it rather a condition to be performed before our actual justification and reconciliation with God. Therefore some late divines have thought fit to bring the doctrine of former Protestants concerning justification to their anvil, and to hammer it into another form, that it might be more free from Antinomianism, and effectual to secure a holy practice. But their labour is vain and pernicious, tending to Antinomian profaneness, or painted hypocrisy at best; neither can the true practice of holiness be secure, except the persuasion of our justification and reconciliation with God, be first obtained without works of the law, that we may be enabled thereby to do them; as I shall now prove by several arguments; intending also to shew, in the following directions, that such a persuasion of the love of God as God giveth to his people, tendeth only to holiness, tho' a mispersuasion of it be in many an occasion of licentiousness.

First, When the first Adam was framed for the practice of holiness at his creation he was highly in the favour of God, and had no sin imputed to him, and was accounted righteous in the sight of God, according to his present state, because he was made up-
right

right according to God's image. And there is no reason to doubt, but that these qualifications were his advantage for a holy practice, and the wisdom of God judged them good for that end; and, as soon as he lost them, he became dead in sin. The second Adam also, in our nature, was the beloved of the Father, accounted righteous in the sight of God, without the imputation of any sin to him, except what his office was to bear on the behalf of others. And can we reasonably expect to be imitators of Christ, by performing more difficult obedience than the first Adam's was before the fall, except the like advantages be given to us by reconciliation, and remissions of sins, and imputation of a righteousness given by God to us, when we have none of our own?

Secondly, Those that know their natural deadness under the power of sin and satan, are fully convinced, that if God leave them to their own hearts, they can do nothing but sin; and that they can do no good work, except it please God, of his great love and mercy, to work it in them^e. Therefore, that they may be encouraged and rationally inclined to holiness, they must hope that God will work savingly in them. Now, I leave it to considerate men to judge, whether such a hope can be well grounded, without a good persuasion of such a reconciliation and saving love of God to us, as depend not upon any precedent goodness of our works, but is a cause sufficient to produce them effectually in us? Yea, we know further, (if we know ourselves sufficiently) that our death in sin proceeded from the guilt of the

^e John viii. 36. Phil. ii. 13. Rom. viii. 7, 8.

first sin of Adam, and the sentence denounced against it ^h, and that it is still maintained in us by the guilt of sin, and the curse of the law; and that spiritual life will never be given us, to free us from that dominion, except this guilt and curse be removed from us; which is done by actual justification ⁱ. And this is sufficient to make us despair of living to God in holiness, while we apprehend ourselves to be under the curse and wrath of God, by reason of other transgressions and sins still lying upon us ^k.

Thirdly, The nature of the duties of the law is such, as requireth an apprehension of our reconciliation with God, and his hearty love and favour towards us for the doing of them. The great duty is love to God with our whole heart; and not such a contemplative love as philosophers may have to the object of sciences, which they are concerned in no further, than to please our fancies in the knowledge of them; but a practical love, whereby we are willing, that God should be absolute Lord and Governor of us and all the world, to dispose of us and all others according to his will, and that he should be the only portion and happiness of all those that are happy; a love, whereby we like every thing in him, as he is our Lord; his justice as well as any other attribute, without wishing or desiring that he were better than he is; and whereby we desire that his will may be done upon us, and all others, whether for prosperity or adversity, life or death; and whereby we can heartily praise him for all things, and delight in our obedience to him, in doing his will, though we suffer that

^h Gen. ii. 17.

ⁱ Gal. iii. 13, 14. Rom. vi. 14.

^k Ezek. xxxiii. 10.

that which is never so grievous to us, even present death. Consider these things well, and you may easily perceive, that our spirits are not in a fit frame for the doing of them, while we apprehend ourselves under the curse and wrath of God, or while we are under prevailing suspicions that God will prove an enemy to us at last. Slavish fear may extort some slavish hypocritical performances from us, such as that of Pharaoh in letting the Israelites go, fore against his will : but the duty of love cannot be extorted and forced by fear, but it must be won and sweetly allured by an apprehension of God's love and goodness towards us ; as that eminent living and beloved disciple testifieth¹. " There is no fear in love, " but perfect love casteth out fear, because fear hath " torment : he that feareth, is not made perfect in " love. We love him, because he first loved us." Observe here, that we cannot be before hand with God in loving him, before we apprehend his love to us. And consult your own experience, if you have any true love to God, whether it were not wrought in you by a sense of God's love first towards you ? All the goodness and excellency of God cannot render him an amiable object to us, except we apprehend him an agreeable good to us. I question not but the devils know the excellency of God's nature, as well as our greatest *metaphysical* speculators ; and this doth but fill them the more with tormenting horror and trembling, that is contrary to love^m. The greater God's excellency and perfection is, the greater evil he is to us, if he hate us and curse us. And therefore the principle of self-preservation deeply rooted in our natures, hindereth us from loving that
which

¹ John iv. 18, 19. ^m Jam. ii. 19

which we apprehend as our own destruction. If a man be an enemy to us, we can love him for the sake of our loving reconciled God, because his love will make man's hatred to work for our good; but, if God himself be our enemy, for whose sake can we love him? who is there that can free us from the evil of his enmity, and turn it to our advantage, until he be pleased to reconcile himself to us?

Fourthly, Our conscience must of necessity be first purged from dead works, that we may serve the living God. And this is done by actual remission of sin, procured by the blood of Christ, and manifested to our consciences; as appeareth by Christ's dying for this endⁿ. That conscience whereby we judge ourselves to be under the guilt of sin and the wrath of God, is accounted an evil conscience in scripture^{*} though it perform its office truly; because it is caused by the evil of sin, and will itself be a cause of our committing more sin, until it can judge us to be justified from all sin, and received into the favour of God. Love, which is the end of the law, must proceed from a good conscience, as well as from any other cleanness of heart. David's mouth could not be opened to shew forth the praise of God, until he was delivered from blood-guiltiness^p. This evil guilty conscience, whereby we judge that God is our enemy, and that his justice is against us to our everlasting condemnation, by reason of our sins, doth strongly maintain and increase the dominion of sin and satan in us, and worketh most mischievous effects in the soul against godliness, even to bring the soul to hate
God,

ⁿ Heb. ix. 14, 15, & x. 1, 2, 4, 14, 17, 22.

^{*} 1 Tim. i. 3. ^p Psal. li. 14, 15.

God, and to wish there were no God, no heaven, no hell, so we might escape the punishment due to us. It so disaffecteth people toward God, that they cannot endure to think, or speak, or hear of him and his law; but strive rather to put him out of their minds by fleshly pleasures and worldly employments. And thus they are alienated from all true religion: only, blinding it, and stopping the mouth of it, it produceth zeal in many outside religious performances; and also false religion, idolatry, and the most inhuman superstitions in the world. I have often considered, by what manner of working any sin could effectually destroy the whole image of God in the first Adam; and I conclude, it was by working first an evil guilty conscience in him, whereby he judged, that the just God was against him, and cursed him for that one sin. And this was enough to work a shameful nakedness by disorderly lusts, a turning his love wholly from God to the creature, and a desire to be hidden from the presence of God^a, which was a total destruction of the image of God's holiness. And we have cause to judge, that from the same cause proceedeth the continual malice, rancour, rage, and blasphemy of the devil, and many notorious wicked men, against God and godliness. Some may think Job uncharitable, in suspecting, not merely that his sons had sinned, but that they had been so abominably wicked, as to curse God in their hearts^r. But Job well understood, that, if the guilt of any ordinary sin lie upon the conscience, it will make the soul to wish secretly that God were not, or that he was not so just a judge; which is a secret cursing of God, that

^a Gen. iii. 8, 10.^r Job i. 5.

that cannot be avoided, until our consciences be purged from the guilt of sin, by the offering of Christ for us; which was then figured out by the burnt-offerings of Job for his sons.

Fifthly, God hath abundantly discovered to us, in his word, that his method, in bringing men from sin to holiness of life, is, first to make them know that he loveth them, and that their sins are blotted out. When he gave the Ten Commandments on mount Sinai, he first discovered himself to be their God, that had given them a sure pledge of his salvation by their delivery from Egypt, in the preface^s. And, during all the time of the Old Testament, God was pleased to make the entrance into religion to be by circumcision: which was not only a sign, but also a seal of the righteousness of faith, whereby God justifieth people, while they are considered as ungodly^t. And this seal was administred to children of eight days old, before they could perform any condition of sincere obedience for their justification, that their furniture for a holy practice might be ready before hand. Furthermore, in the time of the Old Testament, God appointed divers washings, and the blood of bulls and goats, and the ashes of a heifer sprinkling the unclean, to prepare and sanctify them for other parts of his worship in his tabernacle and temple; to figure out his purging their consciences from dead works by the blood of Christ, that they might serve the living God^u. This, I say, was then figurative sanctification, as the word *sanctification* is taken in a large sense, comprehending all things that
prepare

^s Exod. xx. 2.
10, 13, 14, 22.

^t Rom. iv. 5, 11.

^u Heb. ix.

prepare us for the service of God, chiefly the remission of sin^w, tho', if it be taken in a strict sense, respecting only our conformity to the law, it must necessarily be placed after justification, according to the usual method of Protestant divines. God also minded them of the necessity of purging away their guilt first, that their service might be acceptable, by commanding them to offer the sin-offering before the burnt-offering^x. And, lest the guilt of their sins should pollute the service of God, notwithstanding all their particular expiations, God was pleased to appoint a general atonement for all their sins one day every year, wherein the scape-goat was to bear upon him all their iniquities, unto a land not inhabited^y. Under the New Testament, God useth the same method, in loving us first, and washing us from our sins by the blood of Christ, that he may make us priests, to offer the sacrifices of praise and all good works to God, even the Father. He entereth us into his service, by washing away our sins in baptism; he feedeth and strengtheneth us for his service, by remission of sins, given to us in the blood of Christ at the Lord's supper: he exhorteth us to obey him, because he hath already loved us, and our sins are already pardoned. "Forgive one another, even as
" God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you. Be ye
" therefore followers of God, as dear children; and
" walk in love, as Christ hath loved us^z. I write
" unto you, little children, because your sins are
" forgiven you for his name's sake. Love not the
" world, neither the things that are in the world.^a"

I

^w Heb. x. 10, 14, 18.^x Lev. v. 8. & xvi. 3, 11.^y Lev. xvi. 22, 34^z Eph. iv. 32. & v. 1, 2.^a John ii. 12, 15.

I might quote abundance of texts of the same nature. We may clearly see by all this, that God hath accounted it a matter of great importance, and hath condescended to take wonderful care in providing plentiful means, both under the Old and New Testament, that his people might be first cleansed from guilt, and reconciled to himself, to fit them for the acceptable practice of holiness. Away then with all the contrary methods of the new divinity.

THE THIRD ENDOWMENT, necessary to enable us for the practice of holiness, without which a persuasion of our reconciliation with God, would be of little efficacy to work in us a rational propensity to it, is, that *we be persuaded of our future enjoyment of the everlasting heavenly happiness.* This must precede our holy practice, as a cause disposing and alluring us to it. This assertion hath several sorts of adversaries to oppose it. Some account, that a persuasion of our own future happiness, before we have persevered in sincere obedience, tendeth to licentiousness; and that the way to do good works, is rather to make them a condition necessary for the procuring of this persuasion. Others condemn all works that we are allured or stirred up to by the future enjoyment of the heavenly happiness, as legal, mercenary, flowing from self-love, and not from any pure love to God; and they figure out sincere godliness by a man bearing fire in one hand, to burn up heaven, and water in the other, to quench hell; intimating, that the true service of God must not proceed at all from hope of reward, or fear of punishment, but only from love. To establish the truth asserted against
the

the errors that are so contrary to it, and to each other, I shall propose the ensuing considerations.

First, The nature of the duties of the law is such, that they cannot be sincerely and universally practised without this endowment. That this endowment must be present in us, is sufficiently proved already, by all that I have said concerning the necessity of the persuasion of our firm reconciliation with God by our justification, to prepare us for this practice, because that includeth a persuasion of this future happiness, or else it is of little worth. All that I have to add here, is, that sincere obedience cannot rationally subsist, except it be allured, encouraged, and supported by this persuasion. Let me therefore suppose a Saducee believing no happiness after this life, and put the question, Can such an one love God with his whole heart, might, and soul? Will he not think it reasonable, rather to lessen and moderate his love towards God, lest he should be over-much troubled to part with him by death? We account it most reasonable to sit loose in our affections from things that we must part with. Can such an one be satisfied with the enjoyment of God as his happiness? Will he not rather account, that the enjoyment of God, and all religious duties, are vanities, as well as other things; because in a little time we shall have no more benefit by them, than if they had never been? How can such an one be willing to lay down his life for the sake of God, when, by his death, he must part with God, as well as with other things? How can he willingly chuse afflictions rather than sin, when he shall be more miserable in this life for it, and not at all happy hereafter? I grant if affliction come unavoidably upon such a person, he may reasonably judge that

that patience is better for him than impatience; but it will displease him, that he is forced to the use of such a virtue; and he will be prone to fret and murmur at his Creator, and to wish he had never been, rather than to endure such miseries, and to be comforted only with vain transitory enjoyments. I think I have said enough to shew how unfurnished such a man is for holiness. And he that will burn up heaven, and quench hell, that he may serve God out of love, doth thereby leave himself little better furnished than the Sadducee. The one denieth them, the other will not have them at all to be considered in this case.

Secondly, The sure hope of the glory of heaven is made use of ordinarily by God, since the fall of Adam, as an encouragement to the practice of holiness; as the scripture doth abundantly shew. Christ, the great pattern of holiness, *for the joy that was set before him, endured the cross, despising the shame*^b. And tho' I cannot say, that the first Adam had such a sure hope to preserve him in innocency; yet he had, instead of it, the present possession of an earthly paradise, and a happy estate in it; which he knew would last, if he continued in holiness, or be changed into a better happiness. The apostles did not faint under affliction, because they knew that it wrought for them *a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory*^c. The believing Hebrews "took joyfully the spoiling of their goods, knowing in themselves, that they had in heaven a better and an enduring substance"^d. The apostle Paul accounts

^b Heb. xii. 2. ^c 2 Cor. iv. 16, 17. ^d Heb. x. 34.

counts all his sufferings unprofitable, were it not for a glorious resurrection; and that christians would be of all men most miserable; and that the doctrine of the Epicures were rather to be chosen, *Let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we shall die.* And he exhorts the Corinthians to be abundant in the work of the Lord, knowing that their labour shall not be in vain in the Lord^e. As worldly hope keepeth the world at work in their various employments; so God giveth his people the hope of his glory, to keep them close to his service^f. And it is such a sure hope as shall never make them ashamed^g. Those that think it below the excellency of their love, to work from a hope of the heavenly reward, do thereby advance their love beyond the love of the apostles and primitive saints, and even of Christ himself.

Thirdly, This persuasion of our future enjoyment of everlasting happiness, cannot tend to licentiousness, if we understand well, that perfect holiness is a necessary part of that happiness, and that tho' we have a title to that happiness by free justification and adoption, yet we must go to the possession of it in a way of holiness^h. Neither is it legal or mercenary, to be moved by this persuasion; seeing the persuasion itself is not gotten by the works of the law, but by free grace thro' faithⁱ. And, if it be a working from self-love; yet, for certain, it is not that carnal self-love which the scripture condemneth as the mother of sinfulness^k, but a holy self-love, inclining us to prefer God above the flesh and the

D

world,

^e 1 Cor. xv. 58. ^f Heb. vi. 11, 12. ^g 1 John iii. 3.
^h Rom. v. 5. ⁱ 1 John iii. 1, 2, 3. ^j Gal. v. 5.
^k 1 Tim. iii. 2.

world, such as God directeth us unto, when he exhorteth us to save ourselves ^l. And it is so far from being contrary to the pure love of God, that it brings us to love God more purely and intirely. The more good and beneficial we apprehend God to us to all eternity, doubtless the more lovely God will be to us, and our affections will be the more inflamed towards him. God will not be loved as a barren wilderness, a land of darkness to us, neither will he be served for nought ^m. He would think it a dishonour to him to be owned by us as our God, if he had not prepared for us a city ⁿ. And he draweth us to love him by the cords of a man, such cords as the love of men useth to be drawn by, even by his own love to us, in laying his benefits before us ^o. Therefore the way for us to keep ourselves in the love of God, is to look for his mercy unto eternal life ^p.

The LAST ENDOWMENT, for the same end as the former, is, that *we be well persuaded of sufficient strength both to will and perform our duty acceptably, until we come to the enjoyment of the heavenly happiness.*

This is contrary to the error of those that account it sufficient, if we have strength to practice holiness, if we will, or to will it if we please; and this is the sufficient strength which they earnestly contend for, as a great benefit bestowed on all mankind by universal redemption. It is also contrary to the error of those that think the practice of godliness and wickedness

^l Acts ii. 40.
^p Jude, ver. 21.

ⁱ Tim. iv. 16.
ⁿ Heb. xi. 16.

^m Jer. ii. 31. Isa.
^o Hos. xi. 4.

ness to be alike easy, excepting only some difficulty in the first alterations of vicious customs, and in bearing persecutions, which they account to be a rare case; since the kingdoms of the world have been brought to the profession of christianity; or that think that God requireth of men only to do their endeavour, that is, what they can do; and it is nonsense to say they cannot do what they can do. According to their judgment, it is needless to concern ourselves much about sufficient strength for holy practice. For the confirmation of the assertion, against those errors, take these arguments.

First, We are, by nature, dead in trespasses and sins, unable to will or do any thing that is spiritually good, notwithstanding the redemption that is by Christ, until we be actually quickened by Christ^a. Those that are sufficiently enlightned and humbled, know themselves to be naturally in this case; and that they do not only want executive power to do good, but chiefly a heart to will it, and to be pleased with it; and that, if God work not in them both to will and to do, they shall neither will nor do any thing pleasing to him^r, and that if he leave them to their own corruption, after he hath begun the good work, they shall certainly prove vile apostates; and their latter end will be worse than their beginning. We may conclude from hence, that whosoever can courageously attempt the practice of the law, without being well persuaded of a sufficient power whereby he may be enabled to be heartily willing, as well as to perform when he is willing, until he hath gone through the

D 2

whole

^a Eph. ii. 1.

Rom. viii. 7, 8, 9.

^r Phil. ii. 13.

whole work of obedience acceptably ; such an one was never yet truly humbled, and brought to know the plague of his own heart ; neither doth he truly believe the doctrine of original sin, whatever formal profession he makes of it.

Secondly, Those that think sincere conformity to the law in ordinary cases to be so very easy, shew that they neither know it nor themselves. Is it an easy thing to wrestle, not against flesh only, but *against principalities, powers, spiritual wickedness in high places* ? Is it an easy thing not to lust or covet, according to the tenth commandment ? The apostle Paul found it so difficult to obey this commandment, that his concupiscence prevailed the more by occasion of the commandment¹. Our work is, not only to alter vicious customs, but to mortify corrupt natural affections which bred those customs ; and not only to deny the fulfilling of sinful lust, but to be full of holy love and desires : yet even the restraining the execution of corrupt lusts, and crossing them by contrary actings, is, in many cases, like *the cutting off a right hand, and plucking out a right eye*². If obedience be so easy, how came it to pass that the heathens generally did those things for which their own consciences condemned them as worthy of death³ ? and that many among us seek to enter into this *strait gate*, and are not able⁴ ; and break so many vows and purposes of obedience, and fall back to the practice of their lusts, tho', in the mean time, the fears of eternal damnation press hard upon their consciences ?

As

¹ Eph. vi. 12. ² Rom. vii. 7, 8. ³ Matth. v. 29, 30.
⁴ Rom. i. 32. ⁵ Luke xiii. 24.

As for those that find persecution for religion to be so rare a thing in late days, they have cause to be suspected, that they are of the world, and therefore the world loveth his own ; else they would find, that national profession of religion will not secure those that are truly godly from several sorts of persecutions. And suppose men do not persecute us for religion, yet there is great difficulty in bearing great injuries from men on other accounts, and losses, poverty, bodily pains, long diseases, and untimely deaths, from the ordinary providence of God, with such hearty love to God, and to injurious men for his sake, and such a patient acquiescence in his will, as the law of God requireth. I acknowledge, that the work of God is easy and pleasant to those whom God rightly furnisheth with endowments for it ; but those who assert it to be easy to men in their common condition, shew their imprudence in contradicting the general experience of heathens and christians. Though many duties do not require much labour of body or mind, and might be done with ease if we were willing ; yet it is easier to remove a mountain, than to move and incline the heart to will and effect the doing of them. I need not concern myself with those that account that all have sufficient strength for a holy practice, because they can do their endeavour, that is, what they can do ; for God requireth actual fulfilling his commands. What if by our endeavours we can do nothing in any measure according to the rule, shall the law be put off with no performance ? and shall such endeavours be accounted sufficient holiness ? And what if we cannot so much as endeavour in a right way ? If man's ability

were the measure of acceptable duty, the commands of the law would signify very little.

Thirdly, The wisdom of God hath ever furnished people with a good persuasion of a sufficient strength, that they might be enabled both to will and do their duty. The first Adam was furnished with such a strength; and we have no cause to think that he was ignorant of it, or that he needed to fear that he should be left to his own corruptions; because he had no corruptions in him, until he had produced them in himself by sinning against strength: and, when he had lost that strength, he could not recover the practice of holiness, until he was acquainted with a better strength, whereby the head of satan should be bruised^y. Our Lord Christ, doubtless, knew the infinite power of his Deity to enable him for all that he was to do and suffer in our nature. He knew the Lord God would help him, *therefore he should not be confounded*^z. The scripture sheweth what plentiful assurance of strength God gave to Moses, Joshua, Gideon, when he called them to great employments; and to the Israelites, when he called them to subdue the land of Canaan. Christ would have the sons of Zebedee to consider whether they were able to *drink of his cup*, and to *be baptized with the baptism that he was baptized with*^a. Paul encourageth believers to the life of holiness, by persuading them, that sin shall not prevail to get the dominion over them, because they *are not under the law, but under grace*^b. And he exhorteth them

^y Gen. iii. 15.

^z Isa. l. 7.

^a Matth. xx. 22.

^b Rom. vi. 13, 14.

them to be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might, that they might be able to stand against the wiles of the devil^c. John exhorteth believers, not to love the world, nor the things of the world, because they were strong, and had overcome the wicked one^d. They that were called of God heretofore to work miracles, were first acquainted with the gift of power to work them; and no wise man will attempt to do them without knowledge of the gift: even so, when men that are dead in sin are called to do the works of a holy life, which are in them great miracles, God maketh a discovery of the gift of power unto them, that he may encourage them in a rational way to such a wonderful enterprize.

D I R E C T I O N III.

The way to get holy endowments and qualifications necessary to frame and enable us for the immediate practice of the law, is, to receive them out of the fulness of Christ, by fellowship with him; and, that we may have this fellowship, we must be in Christ, and have Christ himself in us, by a mystical union with him.

E X P L I C A T I O N.

HERE, as much as any where, we have great cause to acknowledge, with the apostle, that, *without controversy, great is the mystery of godliness,* even so great that it could not have entered into the heart of man to conceive it, if God had not made it known in the gospel by supernatural revelation. Yea,

D 4

though

^c Eph. vi. 10, 11.^d 1 John ii. 14, 15.

though it be revealed clearly in the holy scriptures, yet the natural man hath not eyes to see it there, for it is foolishness to him; and, if God express it never so plainly and properly, he will think that God is speaking riddles and parables. And I doubt not but it is still a riddle and parable even to many truly godly, that have received a holy nature in this way: for the apostles themselves had the saving benefit of it, before the comforter discovered it clearly to them^e. And they walked in Christ as the way to the Father, before they clearly knew him to be the way^f. And the best of us know it but in part, and must wait for the perfect knowledge of it in another world.

One great mystery is, that the holy frame and disposition whereby our souls are furnished and enabled for immediate practice of the law, must be obtained *by receiving it out of Christ's fulness*, as a thing already prepared and brought to an existence for us in Christ, and treasured up in him; and that as we are justified by a righteousness wrought out in Christ, and imputed to us; so we are sanctified by such a holy frame and qualifications, as are first wrought out and completed in Christ for us, and then imparted to us. And as our natural corruption was produced originally in the first Adam, and propagated from him to us; so our new nature and holiness is first produced in Christ, and derived from him to us, or as it were propagated. So that we are not at all to work together with Christ, in making or producing that holy frame in us, but only to take

it

^e John xiv. 26.^f John xiv. 5.

it to ourselves, and use it in our holy practice, as made ready to our hands. Thus we have fellowship with Christ in receiving that holy frame of spirit that was originally in him : for fellowship is, when several persons have the same things in common^s. This mystery is so great, that, notwithstanding all the light of the gospel, we commonly think that we must get a holy frame by producing it anew in ourselves, and by framing and working it out of our own hearts. Therefore many that are seriously devout, take a great deal of pains to mortify their corrupted nature, and beget a holy frame of heart in themselves, by striving earnestly to master their sinful lusts, and by pressing vehemently upon their hearts many motives to godliness, labouring importunately to squeeze good qualifications out of them, as oil out of a flint. They account, that tho' they be justified by a righteousness wrought out by Christ, yet they must be sanctified by a holiness wrought out by themselves. And tho', out of humility, they are willing to call it infused grace ; yet they think they must get the infusion of it by the same manner of working, as if it were wholly acquired by their endeavours. On this account they acknowledge the entrance into a godly life to be harsh and unpleasing, because it costs so much struggling with their own hearts and affections to new-frame them. If they knew that this way of entrance is not only harsh and unpleasing, but altogether impossible ; and that the true way of mortifying sin, and quickening themselves to holiness, is by receiving a new nature out of the fulness of Christ ; and that we do no more
to

to the production of a new nature, than of original sin, tho' we do more to the reception of it: if they knew this, they might save themselves many a bitter agony, and a great deal of mispent burdensome labour, and employ their endeavours to enter in at the strait gate, in such a way as would be more pleasant and successful.

Another great mystery in the way of sanctification, is the glorious manner of our fellowship with Christ, in receiving a holy frame of heart from him. It is by *our being in Christ*, and having *Christ himself in us*; and that not merely by his universal presence, as he is God, but by such a close union, as that we are one spirit and one flesh with him; which is a privilege peculiar to those that are truly sanctified. I may well call this a mystical union, because the apostle calleth it a *great mystery*, in an epistle full of mysteries^h, intimating, that it is eminently great, above many other mysteries. It is one of the three mystical unions that are the chief mysteries in religion. The other two are, the union of the Trinity of persons in one Godhead, and the union of the divine and human natures in one person, Jesus Christ, God and Man. Though we cannot frame an exact idea of the manner of any of these three unions in our imaginations, because the depth of these mysteries is beyond our comprehension: yet we have cause to believe them all, because they are clearly revealed in scripture, and are a necessary foundation for other points of christian doctrine. Particularly, this union between Christ and believers, is plain in several places of scripture, affirming that Christ is, and

dwelleth

^h Eph. v. 22.

dwelleth in believers, and they in him^l, and that they are so joined together as to become *one spirit^k*, and that believers are members of Christ's body, of his flesh, and of his bones; and they two, Christ and the church, are *one flesh^l*. Furthermore, this union is illustrated in scripture by various resemblances, which would be very much unlike the things which they are made use of to resemble, and would rather seem to beguile us by obscuring the truth, than instruct us by illustrating of it, if there were no true proper union between Christ and believers. It is resembled by the union between God the Father and Christ^m, between the vine and its branchesⁿ, between the head and body^o, between bread and the eater^p. It is not only resembled, but sealed in the Lord's supper; where neither the Popish transubstantiation, nor the Lutherans consubstantiation, nor the Protestants spiritual presence of Christ's body and blood to the true receivers, can stand without it. And, if we can imagine that Christ's body and blood, are not truly eaten and drank by believers, either spiritually or corporally, we shall make the bread and wine joined with the words of institution, not only naked signs, but such signs as are much more apt to breed false notions in us, than to establish us in the truth. And there is nothing in this union so impossible or repugnant to reason, as may force us to depart from the plain and familiar sense of those scriptures that express and illustrate it.

Tho'

^l John vi. 56. & xiv. 20.

^k 1 Cor. vi. 17.

^l Eph. v. 30, 31. ^m John xiv. 20. & xvii. 21, 22, 23.

ⁿ John xv. 4, 5. ^o Eph. i. 22, 23. ^p John vi. 51,

53, 54.

'Tho' Christ be in heaven and we on earth; yet he can join our souls and bodies to his at such a distance, without any substantial change of either, by the same infinite spirit dwelling in him and us; and so our flesh will become his when it is quickened by his spirit, and his flesh ours, as truly as if we did eat his flesh and drink his blood; and he will be in us himself by his spirit, who is one with him, and who can unite more closely to Christ than any material substance can do, or who can make a more close and intimate union between Christ and us. And it will not follow from hence, that a believer is one person with Christ, any more than that Christ is one person with the Father by that greater mystical union. Neither will a believer be hereby made God, but only the temple of God, as Christ's body and soul is; and the spirit's lively instrument, rather than the principal cause. Neither will a believer be necessarily perfect in holiness hereby; or Christ made a sinner: for Christ knoweth how to dwell in believers by certain measures and degrees, and to make them holy so far only as he dwelleth in them. And though this union seem too high a preferment for such unworthy creatures as we are; yet, considering the preciousness of the blood of God, whereby we are redeemed, we should dishonour God, if we should not expect a miraculous advancement to the highest dignity that creatures are capable of through the merits of that blood. Neither is there any thing in this union contrary to the judgment of sense, because the bond of the union, being spiritual, falleth not at all under the judgment of sense.

Several

Several learned men of late acknowledge no other union between Christ and believers, than such as persons or things wholly separated, may have by their mutual relations each to other : and accordingly they interpret the places of scripture that speak of this union. When Christ is called the head of the church, they account that a political head or governor is the thing meant. When Christ is said to be in his people, and they in him, they think that the proper meaning is, that Christ's law, doctrine, grace, salvation, or that godliness is in them, and embraced by them : so that Christ here must not be taken for Christ himself, but for some other thing wrought in them by Christ. When Christ and believers are said to be one spirit and one flesh, they understand it of the agreement of their minds and affections ; as if the greatness of the mystery of this union mentioned ^a, consisted rather in a harsh trope, or a dark improper expression, than in the depth and abstruseness of the thing itself ; and as if Christ and his Apostles had affected obscure intricate expressions, when they speak to the church of things very plain, and easy to be understood. Thus that great mystery, the union of believers with Christ himself, which is the glory of the church, and hath been highly owned formerly both by the ancient fathers, and many eminent protestant divines, particularly writers concerning the doctrine of the Lord's supper, and by a very general consent of the church in many ages, is now exploded out of the new model of divinity. The reason of exploding it, as I judge in charity, is not, because our late learned refiners of divinity think themselves

let's

less able to defend it, than the other two mysterious unions, and to silence the objections of those proud sophisters that will not believe what they cannot comprehend; but rather, because they account it to be one of the sinews of Antinomianism that lay unobserved in the former usual doctrine; that it tendeth to puff up men with a persuasion that they are justified, and have eternal life in them already, and that they need not depend any longer upon their uncertain performances of the condition of sincere obedience for salvation; whereby they account the very foundation of a holy practice to be subverted. But the wisdom of God hath laid another manner of foundation for a holy practice than they imagine, of which this union (which the builders refuse) is a principal stone next to the head of the corner. And, in opposition to their corrupt glosses upon the scriptures that prove it, I assert, that our union with Christ is the cause of our subjection to Christ as a political head in all things, and of the abiding of his law, doctrine, grace, salvation, and all godliness in us, and of our agreement with him in our minds and affections; and therefore it cannot be altogether the same thing with them. And this assertion is useful for a better understanding of the excellency of this union. It is not a privilege procured by our sincere obedience and holiness, as some may imagine, or a reward of good works reserved for us in another world; but it is a privilege bestowed upon believers in their very first entrance into a holy state, on which all ability to do good works doth depend, and all sincere obedience to the law doth follow after it, as fruit produced by it.

Having

Having thus far explained the direction, I shall now shew, that though the truth contained in it be above the reach of natural reason, yet it is evidently discovered to those that have their understandings opened, to discern that supernatural revelation of the mysterious way of sanctification which God hath given to us in the holy scriptures.

First, There are several places in scripture that do plainly express it. Some texts shew, that *all things pertaining to our salvation are treasured up for us in Christ, and comprehended in his fulness*; so that we must have them thence, or not at all¹. “It pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell.” And, in the same epistle², the apostle sheweth, that the holy nature whereby we live to God, was first produced in us by his death and resurrection: “In whom also ye are circumcised, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh; buried with him, quickened together with him, when you were dead in your sins³. Who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ.” A holy frame of spirit, with all its necessary qualifications, must needs be comprehended here in *all spiritual blessings*: and these are given us in Christ’s person in heavenly places, as prepared and treasured up in him for us while we are upon earth; and therefore we must have our holy endowments out of him, or not at all. In this text some chuse rather to read heavenly things, as in the margin, because neither places nor things are expressed in the original; but the former textual reading is to be preferred before the marginal,

¹ Col. i. 19.² Col. ii. 11, 12, 13.³ Eph. i. 3.

marginal, as being the proper sense of the original *Greek* phrase, which is, and must necessarily be so rendered in two other places of this same epistle ^u. Another text is ^w, which sheweth, that *Christ is of God, made unto us sanctification*, by which we are able to walk holily; as well as *wisdom*, by the knowledge of which we are savingly wise; and *righteousness*, by the imputation of which we are justified; and *redemption*, whereby we are redeemed from all misery, to the enjoyment of his glory, as our happiness in the heavenly kingdom. Other texts of scripture shew plainly, that we receive our holiness out of his fulness by fellowship with him ^x. “*Of his fulness have we all received, and grace for grace.*” And it is understood of grace answerable to the law given by *Moses*, which must needs include the grace of sanctification ^y. “Truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. God is light. If we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another.” Hence we may infer, that our fellowship with God and Christ, doth include particularly our having light, and walking in it holily and righteously. There are other texts that reach the proof of the whole direction fully; shewing not only that our holy endowments are made ready first in Christ for us, and received from Christ; but that we receive them by union with Christ ^z. “Ye have put on the new man, which is renewed after the image of him that created him; where Christ is all, and in all ^a.
“He

^u Chap. iii. 10. & vi. 12.

^w 1 Cor. i. 30.

^x John i. 16, 17. ^y 1 John i. 3, 5, 6, 7. ^z Col. iii. 10, 11. ^a 1 Cor. vi. 17.

“ He that is joined to the Lord, is one spirit ^b. I
 “ live ; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me ^c. This
 “ is the record, that God hath given to us eternal
 “ life ; and this life is in his Son. He that hath
 “ the Son, hath life and he that hath not the Son,
 “ hath not life.” Can we desire that God should
 more clearly teach us, that all the fulness of the
 new man is in Christ ; and all that spiritual nature
 and life whereby we live to God in holiness ; and
 that they are fixed in him so inseparably, that we
 cannot have them, except we be joined to him,
 and have himself abiding in us ? Take heed least
 thro’ prejudice, and hardness of heart, you be guilty
 of making God a liar, in not believing this eminent
 record that God hath given to us of his Son.

Secondly, God is pleased to illustrate this myste-
 rious manner of our sanctification by such variety of
 similitudes and resemblances, as may put us out of
 doubt that it is truth, and such a truth as we are
 highly concerned to know and believe. I shall en-
 deavour to contract the chief of these resemblances,
 and the force of them briefly into one sentence ;
 leaving it to those that are spiritual, to enlarge their
 meditation upon them. We receive from Christ a
 new holy frame and nature, whereby we are enabled
 for a holy practice, by union and fellowship with
 him ; in like manner, 1. As Christ lived in our
 nature by the Father ^d. 2. As we receive original
 sin and death propagated to us from the first Adam ^e.
 3. As the natural body receiveth sense, motion, and
 nourishment, from the head ^f. 4. As the branch
 E receiveth

^b Gal. ii. 20. ^c 1 John v. 11, 12. ^d John vi. 57.
^e Rom. v. 12, 14, 16, 17. ^f Col. ii. 19.

receiveth its sap, juice, and fructifying virtue, from the vine ^g. 5. As the wife bringeth forth fruit by virtue of her conjugal union with her husband ^h. 6. As stones become a holy temple, by being built upon the foundation, and joined with the chief corner-stone ⁱ. 7. As we receive the nourishing virtue of bread by eating it, and of wine by drinking it ^k, which last resemblance is used to seal to us our communion with Christ in the Lord's supper. Here are seven resemblances instanced, whereof some do illustrate the mystery spoken of more fully than others: all of them do some way intimate, that our new life and holy nature is first in Christ, and then in us, by a true proper union and fellowship with him. If any should urge, that the similitudes of Adam and his seed, and of married couples, do make rather for a relative, than a real union, betwixt Christ and us; let them consider, that all nations are really made of one blood, which was first in Adam ^l; and that the first woman was made out of the body of Adam, and was really bone of his bone, and flesh of his flesh. And by this first married couple, the mystical union of Christ and his church is eminently resembled ^m. And yet it supposeth both these resemblances in the nearness and fulness of them; because those that are joined to the Lord, are not only one flesh, but one spirit with him.

Thirdly, The end of Christ's incarnation, death and resurrection, was, to prepare and form a holy nature

^g John xv. 4, 5.

^h Rom. vii. 4.

ⁱ 1 Pet. ii. 4.

5, 6.

^k John vi. 51, 55, 57.

^l Acts xvii. 26.

^m Gen. ii. 22, 23, 24. with Eph. v. 30, 31, 32.

nature and frame for us in himself, to be communicated to us by union and fellowship with him; and not to enable us to produce in ourselves the first original of such a holy nature by our own endeavours.

1. By his incarnation, there was a man created in a new holy frame, after the holiness of the first Adam's frame had been marred and abolished by the first transgression: and this new frame was far more excellent than ever the first Adam's was; because man was really joined to God by a close inseparable union of the divine and human nature in one person, Christ; so that these natures had communion each with other in their actings, and Christ was able to act in his human nature, by power proper to the divine nature, wherein he was one God with the Father. These words that he spake while he was upon earth, he spoke not of himself by any mere human power, but the Father that dwelt in him, he did the works^a. Why was it that Christ set up the fallen nature of man in such a wonderful frame of holiness, in bringing it to live and act by communion with God, living and acting in it? One great end was, that he might communicate this excellent frame to his seed, that should be born of him, and in him, by his spirit, as the last Adam, the quickening spirit; that, *as we have borne the image of the earthly man, so we might also bear the image of the heavenly*^o, in holiness here, and in glory hereafter. Thus he was born Emmanuel, God with us; because the fulness of the Godhead, with

E 2

all

^a John xiv. 10.^o 1 Cor. xv. 45, 49.

all holiness, did first dwell in him bodily, even in his human nature; that we might be filled up with that fulness in him^p. Thus he came down from heaven as living bread, that as he liveth by the Father, so those that eat him may live by him^q, by the same life of God in them that was first in him.

2. By his death, he freed himself from the guilt of our sins imputed to him, and from all that innocent weakness of his human nature, which he had borne for a time for our sakes. And, by freeing himself, he prepared a freedom for us from our whole natural condition; which is both weak as his was, and also polluted with our guilt and sinful corruption. Thus the corrupt natural estate, which is called in scripture *the old man*, was crucified together with Christ, that the body of sin might be destroyed. And it is destroyed in us, not by any wounds that we ourselves can give to it, but by our partaking of that freedom from it, and death unto it, that is already wrought out for us by the death of Christ: as is signified by our baptism, wherein we are buried with Christ by the application of his death to us^r. God “sending his own Son in the
“ likeness of sinful flesh, for sin (or, *by a sacrifice*
“ *for sin*, as in the margin) condemned sin in the
“ flesh; that the righteousness of the law might
“ be fulfilled in us, that walk not after the flesh
“ but after the spirit^s.” Observe here, that tho’ Christ died, that we might be justified by the righteousness

^p Matt. i. 23. Col. ii. 9, 10.

^q John vi. 51, 56.

^r Rom. vi. 2, 3, 4, 10, 11.

^s Rom. viii. 3, 4.

teousness of God and of faith, not by our own righteousness, which is of the law ^a; yet he died also, that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, and that by walking after his spirit, as those that are in Christ ^u. He is resembled in his death to a corn of wheat dying in the earth, that it may propagate its own nature, by bringing forth much fruit ^w; to the passover that was slain, that a feast might be kept upon it; and to bread broken, that it may be nourishment to those that eat it ^x; to the rock smitten, that water may gush out of it for us to drink ^y. He died, that he might make, of Jew and Gentile, one new man in himself ^z, and that he might see his seed, i. e. such as derive their holy nature from him ^a. Let these scriptures be well observed, and they will sufficiently evidence, that Christ died, not that we might be able to form a holy nature in ourselves, but that we might receive one ready prepared and formed in Christ for us, by union and fellowship with him.

3. By his resurrection, he took possession of spiritual life for us, as now fully procured for us, and made to be our right and property by the merit of his death: and therefore we are said to be quickened together with Christ, even when we were dead in sins, and to be raised up together, yea, and to be made to sit together, in heavenly places, in Christ Jesus, as our head, while we continue upon earth in our own persons ^b. His resurrection was our resurrection to the life of holiness, as Adam's fall was

E 3

our

^a Rom. x. 4, 5, 6. Phil. iii. 9.^u Rom. ibid.^w John xii. 24. ^x 1 Cor. v. 7, 8. and xi. 24. ^y 1 Cor.x. 4. ^z Eph. ii. 15. ^a Isa. liii. 10. ^b Eph. ii. 5, 6.

our fall in spiritual death. And we are not ourselves the first makers and formers of our new holy nature, any more than of our original corruption; but both are formed ready for us to partake of them. And, by union with Christ, we partake of that spiritual life that he took possession of for us at his resurrection, and thereby we are enabled to bring forth the fruits of it; as the scripture sheweth by the similitude of a marriage union^c. “We are married to him that is raised from the dead, that we might bring forth fruit unto God.” Baptism signifieth the application of Christ’s resurrection to us, as well as his death; we are raised up with him in it, to newness of life, as well as buried with him, and we are taught thereby, that, because “he died unto sin once, and liveth unto God, we should likewise reckon ourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, and alive unto God, through Jesus Christ our Lord^d.”

Fourthly, Our sanctification is by the Holy Ghost, by whom we live and walk holily^e. Now, the Holy Ghost first rested on Christ in all fulness, that he might be communicated from him to us; as was signified to John the Baptist, by the similitude of the descending of a dove from the opened heavens, resting on Christ at his baptism^f. And, when he sanctifieth us, he baptiseth us into Christ, and joineth us to Christ by himself, as the great bond of union^g. So that, according to the scriptural phrase, it is all one, to have Christ himself, and to have the spirit of

^c Rom. vii. 4. ^d Rom. vi. 4, 5, 10, 11. ^e Rom. xv. 16. Gal. v. 25. ^f John i. 32, 33. ^g 1 Cor. xii. 13.

of Christ, in us ^h. "He glorifieth Christ; for he
"receiveth those things that are Christ's, and shew-
"eth them to usⁱ. He giveth us an experimental
knowledge of those spiritual blessings which he him-
self prepared for us by the incarnation, death, and
resurrection of Christ.

Fifthly, The effectual causes of those four prin-
cipal endowments, which, in the foregoing direc-
tion, were asserted as necessary to furnish us for the
immediate practice of holiness, are comprehended
in the fulness of Christ, and treasured up for us in
him; and the endowments themselves, together
with their causes, are attained richly by union and
fellowship with Christ. If we be joined to Christ,
our hearts will be no longer left under the power of
sinful inclinations, or in a mere indifferency of in-
clination to good or evil; but they will be power-
fully endued with a power, bent, and propensity to
the practice of holiness, by the spirit of Christ dwell-
ing in us, and inclining us to mind spiritual things,
and to lust against the flesh ^k. And we have in
Christ a full reconciliation with God, and an ad-
vancement into higher favour with him, than the
first Adam had in the state of innocency; because the
righteousness that Christ wrought out for us by his
obedience unto death, is imputed to us for our justi-
fication: which is called the righteousness of God,
because it was wrought by one that is God as well
as man; and therefore it is of infinite value, to sa-
tisfy the justice of God for all our sins, and to pro-

E 4

cure

^h Rom. viii. 9, 10. ⁱ John xvi. 14, 15. ^k Rom.
viii. 1, 4, 5. Gal. v. 17.

cure his pardon and highest favour for us¹. And, that we may be persuaded of this reconciliation, we receive the spirit of adoption through Christ, whereby we cry, *Abba, Father*^m. Hereby also we are persuaded of our future enjoyment of the everlasting happiness, and of sufficient strength both to will and to perform our duty acceptably, until we come to that enjoyment. For the spirit of adoption teacheth us to conclude, that if we be the children of God, then we are heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ; and that the law of the spirit of life that is in Christ Jesus, maketh us free from the law of sin and death; and that nothing shall be against us, nothing shall separate us from the love of God in Christ, but, in all opposition and difficulties that we meet with, we shall be at least, *more than conquerors through him that loved us*ⁿ. Furthermore, this comfortable persuasion of our justification and future happiness, and all saving privileges, cannot tend to licentiousness, as it is given only in this way of union with Christ; because it is joined inseparably with the gift of sanctification, by the spirit of Christ: so that we cannot have justification, or any saving privilege in Christ, except we receive Christ himself, and his holiness, as well as any other benefit; as the scripture testifieth, that "there is no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the spirit".

Sixthly, Whereas it may be doubted, whether the saints that lived before the coming of Christ in the flesh, could possibly be one flesh with him, and receive

¹ 2 Cor. v. 21. Rom. v. 19.
ⁿ Rom. viii. 17, 23, 35, 37, 39.

^m Rom. viii. 15.
^o Rom. viii. 1.

ceive a new nature by union and fellowship with him, as prepared for them in his fulness; we are to know, that the same Christ that took our flesh, was before Abraham^p, and was fore-ordained before the foundation of the world, to be sacrificed as a lamb without blemish, that he might redeem us from all iniquity by his precious blood^q, and he had the same spirit then, which filled his human nature with all its fulness afterwards, and raised it from the dead; and he gave that spirit then to the church^r. Now, this spirit was able and effectual to unite those saints to that flesh which Christ was to take to himself in the fulness of time, because he was the same in both, and to give out to them that grace with which Christ would afterwards fill his flesh, for their salvation, as well as ours. Therefore David accounted Christ's flesh to be his, and spake of Christ's death and resurrection as his own, before-hand, as fully as any of us can do, since their accomplishment^s. "My flesh also shall rest in hope: for thou wilt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt thou suffer thine holy one to see corruption. Thou wilt shew me the path of life." Yea, and saints before David's time, *did all eat of the same spiritual meat, and drink of the same spiritual drink*, even of the same Christ, as we do; and therefore were partakers of the same privilege of union and fellowship with Christ^t. And, when Christ was manifested in the flesh, in the fulness of time, all things in heaven and on earth, all the saints departed, whose spirits were then made perfect in heaven, as well as the

saints

^p John viii. 58. ^q 1 Pet. i. 18, 19, 20. ^r 1 Pet. i. 11. & iii. 18, 19. ^s Psal. xvi. 9, 10, 11. ^t 1 Cor. x. 3, 4.

saints that then were, or should afterwards be on earth, were gathered together in one, and comprehended in Christ as their head^u. And he was the chief corner-stone, in whom the building of the whole church upon the foundation of the prophets before, and the apostles after his coming, being fitly framed together, groweth unto a holy temple in the Lord^w. "Jesus Christ is the same, yesterday, and to day, and for ever^x." His incarnation, death, and resurrection, were the cause of all the holiness that ever was, or shall be given to man, from the fall of Adam to the end of the world; and that by the mighty power of his spirit, whereby all saints that ever were or shall be, are joined together, to be members of that one mystical body whereof he is the head.

DIRECTION IV.

The means or instruments whereby the Spirit of God accomplisheth our union with Christ, and our fellowship with him in all holiness, are, the gospel, whereby Christ entereth into our hearts to work faith in us; and faith, whereby we actually receive Christ himself, with all his fulness, into our hearts. And this faith is a grace of the Spirit, whereby we heartily believe the gospel, and also believe on Christ, as he is revealed and freely promised to us therein, for all his salvation.

EXPLICATION.

THAT which I asserted, in the foregoing direction, concerning the necessity of our being in Christ, and having Christ in us, by a mystical union, to enable us

^u Eph. i. 10. ^w Eph. ii. 20, 21. ^x Heb. xiii. 8.

for a holy practice, might put us to a stand in our endeavours for holiness; because we cannot imagine how we should be able to raise ourselves above our natural sphere, to this glorious union and fellowship, until God be pleased to make known to us, by supernatural revelation, the means whereby his spirit maketh us partakers of so high a privilege. But God is pleased to help us at a stand to go on forward, by revealing two means or instruments, whereby his spirit accomplisheth the mystical union and fellowship between Christ and us, and whereby rational creatures are capable of attaining thereunto, by his spirit working in them.

One of these means is the *gospel of the grace of God*, wherein God doth make known unto us the unsearchable riches of Christ, and Christ in us, the hope of glory^y; and doth also invite us and command us to believe on Christ for his salvation, and doth encourage us by a free promise of that salvation to all that believe on him^z. This is God's own instrument of conveyance, wherein he sendeth Christ to us to bless us with his salvation^a. It is the ministration of the spirit, and of righteousness^b. Faith cometh by the hearing of it; and therefore it is a great instrument whereby we are begotten in Christ, and Christ is formed in us^c. There is no need for us to say in our hearts, "who shall ascend into heaven, to bring Christ down from above? or, who shall descend into the deep, to bring up Christ from the dead?"
that

^y Eph. iii. 8. Col. i. 27. ^z Acts xiii. 38, 39.
Rom. x. 9, 11. ^a Acts. iii. 26. ^b 2 Cor. iii. 6,
8, 9. ^c Rom. x. 16, 17. 1 Cor. iv. 14. Gal.
iv. 19.

that we may be united, and have fellowship with him in his death and resurrection: for the word is nigh to us, the gospel, the word of faith, in which Christ himself graciously condescendeth to be nigh to us; so that we may come at him there, without going any further, if we desire to be joined to him ^d.

The other of the means is *faith*, that is wrought in us by the gospel. This is our instrument of reception, whereby the union between Christ and us is accomplished, on our part, by our actual receiving Christ himself, with all his fulness, into our hearts; which is the principal subject of the present explanation.

The faith which philosophers commonly treat of, is only a habit of the understanding, whereby we assent to a testimony upon the authority of the testifier. Accordingly, some would have faith in Christ to be no more than a believing the truth of things in religion, upon the authority of Christ testifying them. But the apostle sheweth, that the faith whereby we are justified, is faith in Christ's blood ^e, not only in his authority as a testifier. And tho' a mere assent to a testimony were sufficient faith for knowledge of things, which the philosophers aimed at; yet we are to consider, that the design of saving faith is, not only to know the truth of Christ and his salvation, testified and promised in the gospel, but also to apprehend and receive Christ and his salvation, as given by and with the promise. Therefore saving faith must necessarily contain two acts, *believing the truth of the gospel*, and *believing on Christ*, as promised freely to us in the gospel for all salvation. By the one, it receiveth the means

^d Rom. x. 6, 7, 8.

^e Rom. iii. 24, 25.

means wherein Christ is conveyed to us ; by the other, it receiveth Christ himself and his salvation in the means : as it is one act, to receive the breast or cup wherein milk or wine are conveyed ; and another act, to suck the milk in the breast, and to drink the wine in the cup. And both these acts must be performed heartily, with an unfeigned love to the truth, and a desire of Christ and his salvation above all things. This is our spiritual appetite, which is necessary for our eating and drinking Christ, the food of life, as a natural appetite is for bodily nourishment. Our assenting unto, or believing the gospel, must not be forced by mere conviction of the truth, such as wicked men and devils may be brought to, when they had rather it were false ; neither must our believing on Christ be only constrained for fear of damnation, without any hearty love and desire towards the enjoyment of him : but we must receive the love of the truth, by relishing the goodness and excellency of it ; and we must “ account all things loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus our Lord, “ and count them but dung, that we may win Christ, “ and be found in him ^f ; ” esteeming Christ to be all our salvation and happiness ^g, in whom all fulness doth dwell ^h. And this love must be to every part of Christ’s salvation ; to holiness, as well as forgiveness of sins. We must desire earnestly, that God would create in us a clean heart and right spirit, as well as hide his face from our sins ⁱ : not like many, that care for nothing in Christ but only deliverance from hell. “ Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after righteousness ;

^f 2 Theff. ii. 10. Phil. iii. 8, 9. ^g Col. iii. 11.
^h Col. i. 19. ⁱ Psal. li. 9, 10.

"ousness; for they shall be filled ^k." The former of these acts doth not immediately unite us to Christ, because it is terminated only on the means of conveyance, the gospel; yet it is a saving act, if it be rightly performed, because it inclineth and disposeth the soul to the latter act, whereby Christ himself is immediately received into the heart. He that believeth the gospel with hearty love and liking, as the most excellent truth, will certainly with the like heartiness believe on Christ for his salvation. "They that know the name of the Lord, will certainly put their trust in him ^l" Therefore, in scripture, saving faith is sometimes described by the former of these acts, as if it were a mere believing the gospel; sometimes by the latter, as a believing on Christ or in Christ ^m. "If thou believe in thine heart, that God raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved." The scripture saith, "that whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed; whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of God. These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God, that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God ⁿ."

For the better understanding of the nature of faith, let it be further observed, that the second and principal act of it, *believing on Christ*, includeth believing on God the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost; because they are one and the same infinite God, and they all concur in our salvation by Christ, as the only Mediator between God and us, *in whom all the promises of*
God

^k Matt. v. 6. ^l Psal. ix. 10. ^m Rom. x. 9, 11.
ⁿ 1 John v. 1, 13.

God are yea and amen °. “ By him (as Mediator) we
“ believe on God, that raised him from the dead, and
“ gave him glory, that our faith and hope might be
“ in God^p. “ And it is the same thing with trusting
on God, or on the Lord, which is so highly com-
mended in the whole scripture, especially in the Old
Testament ; as may easily appear, by considering,
that it hath the same causes, effects, objects, adjuncts,
opposites, and all the same circumstances, excepting
only that it had a respect to Christ as promised, before
his coming, and now it respecteth him as already
come in the flesh. *Believing in the Lord, and trusting
on his salvation*, are equivalent terms, that explain one
another °. I confess, that trusting on things seen or
known by the mere light of reason, as on our own
wisdom, power, riches, on princes, or any arm of
flesh, may not so properly be called believing on
them ; but trusting on a Saviour, as discovered by a
testimony, is properly believing on him. It is also
the same thing that is expressed by the terms of rest-
ing, relying, leaning, staying ourselves on the Lord,
called hoping in the Lord ; because it is the ground
of that expectation which is the proper act of hope,
though our believing and trusting be for the present,
as well as future benefit of this salvation. The rea-
son why it is so commonly expressed, in the scriptures
of the New Testament, by the term of believing on
Christ, might be probably, because, when that part
of scripture was written, there was cause, in a special
manner, to urge believing the testimony that was then
newly revealed by the gospel.

Having

° 2 Cor. i. 20,
lxxviii. 23.

^p 1 Pet. i. 21.

° Psal.

Having thus explained the nature of faith, I come now to assert its proper *use* and *office* in our salvation. That it is the means and instrument whereby we receive Christ, and all his fulness, actually into our hearts. This excellent use and office of faith is encountered by a multitude of errors. Men naturally esteem, that it is too small and slight a thing to produce so great effects; as Naaman thought washing in Jordan too small a matter for the cure of his leprosy. They contemn the true means of entering in at the strait gate, because they seem too easy for such purpose; and thereby they make the entrance not only difficult, but impossible to themselves. Some will allow, that faith is the sole condition of our justification, and the instrument to receive it, according to the doctrine maintained formerly by the Protestants against the Papists; but they account, that it is not sufficient or effectual to sanctification, but that it rather tendeth to licentiousness, if it be not joined with some other means, that may be powerful and effectual to secure a holy practice. They commend this great doctrine of Protestants, as a comfortable cordial for persons upon their death beds, or in agonies under terrors of conscience; but they account, that it is not good for ordinary food, and that it is wisdom in Ministers to preach it seldom and sparingly, and not without some antidote or corrective, to prevent the licentiousness to which it tendeth. Their common antidote or corrective is, that sanctification is necessary to salvation as well as justification; and that tho' we be justified by faith, yet we are sanctified by our own performance of the law: and so they set up salvation by works,

works, and make the grace of justification to be of none effect, and not at all comfortable. If it had indeed such a malignant influence upon practice, it could not be owned as a doctrine proceeding from the most holy God; and all the comfort that it affords, must needs be ungrounded and deceitful. This consequence is well understood by some late refiners of the protestant religion; and therefore they have thought fit to new model this doctrine, and to make saving faith to be only a condition to procure a right and title to our justification by the righteousness of Christ, which must be performed before we can lay any good claim to the enjoyment of it, and before we have any right to use any instrument for the actual receiving of it, and this they call an accepting of, or receiving Christ. And, that they may the better secure the practice of holiness by their conditional faith, they will not have trusting on God or Christ for salvation, to be accounted the principal saving act of it; because, as it seemeth to them, many loose wicked people trust on God and Christ for their salvation as much as others, and are, by their confidence, hardened the more in their wickedness: but they had rather it should be obedience to all Christ's laws, at least in resolution; or a consent that Christ should be their Lord, accepting of his terms of salvation, and a resignation of themselves to his government in all things. It is a sign that the scripture form of teaching is grown into disesteem with our great masters of reason, when trusting in the Lord, so much commended in scripture, is accounted a mean and ordinary thing. They endeavour to affright us from owning faith to be an instrument of justification, by

telling us, that thereby we that use the instrument, are made our own principal justifiers, to the dishonour of God; though it might be easily answered, that we are made thereby only the principal receivers of our own justification from God, the giver of it, to whom all the glory doth belong.

All these errors will fall, if it can be proved, that such a faith as I have described, is an instrument whereby we actually receive Christ himself into our hearts, and holiness of heart and life, as well as justification, by union and fellowship with him. For the proof of it, I shall offer the following arguments.

First, By faith we have the actual enjoyment and possession of Christ himself, and not only of remission of sins, but of life, and so of holiness. "Christ dwelleth in our hearts by faith ^r." We live to God; and yet not we, but "Christ liveth in us by the faith of the Son of God ^s." "He that believeth on the Son of God, hath the Son and everlasting life that is in him ^t." "He that heareth Christ's word, and believeth on him that sent Christ, hath everlasting life, and is passed from death unto life ^u." These texts express clearly such a faith as I have described. Therefore the efficiency or operation of faith, in order to the enjoyment of Christ and his fulness, cannot be the procurement of a bare right or title to this enjoyment; but rather it must be an entrance into it, and taking possession of it. "We have our access and entrance by faith into that grace of Christ wherein we stand ^w."

Secondly,

^r Eph. iii. 17. ^s Gal. ii. 19, 20.

12, 13. & iii. 36.

^t John v. 24.

^u 1 John v. 1.

^w Rom. v. 2.

Secondly, The scripture plainly ascribeth this effect to faith, that by it we receive Christ, put him on, are rooted and grounded in him; and also that we receive the Spirit, remission of sins, and an inheritance among all them which are sanctified^x. And the scripture illustrateth this receiving by the similitude of eating and drinking: "he that believeth on Christ, drinketh the living water or his Spirit^y." "Christ is the bread of life; his flesh is meat indeed, and his blood is drink indeed." And the way to eat and drink it, is, to believe in Christ; and, by so doing, we dwell in Christ, and Christ in us, and have everlasting life^z. How can it be taught more clearly, that we receive Christ himself properly into our souls by faith, as we do receive food into our bodies by eating and drinking, and that Christ is as truly united to us thereby as our food when we eat or drink it? So that faith cannot be a condition to procure a mere right or title to Christ, no more than eating or drinking procureth a mere right or title to our food; but it is rather an instrument to receive it, as the mouth that eateth and drinketh the food.

Thirdly, Christ, with all his salvation, is freely given by the grace of God to all that believe on him; for "we are saved by grace through faith; and that not of ourselves; it is the gift of God^a." "We are justified freely, by his grace, through faith in his blood^b." "The Holy Ghost, who is the bond of union between Christ and us, is a gift^c."

F 2

Now,

^x John i. 12. Gal. iii. 26, 27. Col. ii. 6, 7. Gal. iii. 14. Acts xxvi. 18. ^y John vii. 37, 38, 39.

^z John vi. 35, 47, 48, 54, 55, 56. ^a Eph. ii. 8, 9.

^b Rom. iii. 24, 25. ^c Acts ii. 38.

Now, that which is a gift of grace, must not at all be earned, purchased, or procured, by any work or works performed as a condition to get a right or title to it; and therefore faith itself must not be accounted such a conditional work. “If it be by grace; it is “no more of works; otherwise grace is no more “grace^d.” The condition of a free gift is only, Take and have. And in this sense we will readily acknowledge faith to be a condition, allowing a liberty in terms where we agree in the thing: but, if you give a pepper-corn to purchase a title to it, then you spoil the freeness of the gift. The *free offer* of Christ to you, is sufficient to confer upon you a right, yea to make it your duty, to receive Christ and his salvation as yours. And because we receive Christ by faith as a free gift, therefore we may account faith to be the instrument, and, as it were, the hand whereby we receive him.

Fourthly, It hath been already proved, that all spiritual life and holiness is treasured up in the fulness of Christ, and communicated to us by union with him. Therefore the accomplishing of union with Christ, is the first work of saving grace in our hearts. And faith itself, being a holy grace, and part of spiritual life, cannot be in us before the beginning of it; but rather it is given to us, and wrought in the very working of the union. And the way wherein it conduceth to the union, cannot be by procuring a mere title to Christ as a condition, because then it should be performed before the uniting work beginneth; but rather by being an instrument, whereby we may actively receive and embrace Christ, who is already

come

^d Rom. xi. 6.

come into the soul, to take possession of it as his own habitation.

Fifthly, True saving faith, such as I have described, hath in its nature, and manner of operation, a peculiar aptitude or fitness to receive Christ and his salvation, and to unite our souls unto him; and to furnish the soul with a new holy nature, and to bring forth a holy practice by union and fellowship with him. God hath fitted natural instruments for their office, as the hands, feet, &c. so that we may know, by their nature and natural manner of operation, for what use they are designed. In like manner, we may know, that faith is an instrument formed on purpose for our union with Christ, and sanctification, if we consider what a peculiar fitness it hath for the work. The discovery of this is of great use for the understanding of the mysterious manner of our receiving and practising all holiness by union and fellowship with Christ, by this precious grace of faith. And, to make you, as it were, to see with your eyes, that it is such an instrument as I have asserted it to be, I shall present it to your view in three particulars.

1st, The grace of faith is as well fitted for the soul's receiving Christ, and union with him, as any instrument of the body is for receiving and closing with things needful for it. By the very act of hearty trusting or believing on Christ for all salvation and happiness, the soul casteth and putteth away from itself every thing that keepeth it at a distance from Christ; as all confidence in our strength, endeavours, works, privileges; or in any worldly pleasures, profits, honours; or in any human helps and succours, for our happiness and salvation: because such con-

fidences are inconsistent with our confidence in Christ for all salvation. Paul, by his confidence in Christ, was taken off from all confidence in the flesh; he suffered the loss of glorying in his privileges and legal righteousness, and counted all other enjoyments in matters of the world, or of religion, to be but *dung, that he might win Christ, and be found in him^e*. The voice of faith is, “*Assur shall not save us, we will not ride upon horses, neither will we say any more to the work of our hands, Ye are our gods: for in thee the fatherless findeth mercy^f*.” “*We have no might against this great company of our spiritual enemies; neither know we what to do: but our eyes are upon thee^g*.” I might multiply places of scripture to shew what a self-emptying grace faith is, and how it casteth other confidences out of the soul, by getting above them to Christ, as the only happiness and salvation. The same act of trusting or believing on Christ, or on God, is the very manner of our souls coming to Christ^h; *drawing near to the Lordⁱ; fleeing unto the Lord to hide us^k; making our refuge in the shadow of his wings^l; staying ourselves and our minds upon the Lord^m; laying hold on eternal lifeⁿ; lifting up our souls to the Lord^o; rolling our way, and casting our burden upon the Lord^p*: and of our eating and drinking Christ, as hath already appeared. Let us consider, that Christ and his salvation cannot be seen, or handled, or attained to, by
any

^e Phil. iii. 3, 6, 7, 8, 9. ^f Hof. xiv. 3. ^g 2 Chron. xx. 12. ^h John vi. 35. ⁱ Psal. lxxiii. 28. ^k Psal. cxliii. 9. ^l Psal. lvii. 1. ^m Isa. l. 10. & xxvi. 3. ⁿ 1 Tim. vi. 12. ^o Psal. xxv. 1. ^p Psal. xxxvii. 5. & lv. 22.

any bodily motion; but are revealed and promised to us in the word. Now, let any invent, if they can, any way for the soul to exercise any motion or activeness in receiving of this unseen promised salvation, besides believing the word, and trusting on Christ for the benefit promised. If Christ were to be earned by works, or any other kind of conditional faith; yet a faith must be instrumental to receive him. Some think love as fit to be the uniting grace; but I have shewed, that love to Christ's salvation is an ingredient into faith. And though love be an appetite unto union, yet we have no other likely way to fill this appetite, while we are in this world, besides trust on Christ for all his benefits, as he is promised in the gospel.

2dly, There is in this saving faith a natural tendency to furnish the soul with a holy frame and nature, and all endowments necessary thereunto, out of the fulness of Christ. A hearty affectionate trusting on Christ for all his salvation, as freely promised to us, hath naturally enough in it to work in our souls a rational bent and inclination to, and ability for, the practice of all holiness; because it comprehendeth in it a trusting, *that, through Christ, we are dead to sin, and alive to God, and that our old man is crucified*^a; and that *we live by the Spirit*^r; and that *we have forgiveness of sin*^s; and that *God is our God*^t; and that *we have in the Lord righteousness and strength, whereby we are able to do all things*^u; and that *we shall be gloriously happy in the enjoyment of Christ to all eternity*^w.

F 4

When

^a Rom. vi. 2, 3, 4. ^r Gal. v. 25. ^s Eph. i. 7.
^t Col. i. 14. ^u Phil. xlviii. 14. ^w Isa. xlv. 24. Phil.
 iv. 13. ^w Phil. iii. 20, 21.

When the saints in scripture speak so highly of such glorious spiritual privileges as I have here named, they acquaint us with the familiar sense and language of their faith, trusting on God and Christ, and they give us but an explication of the nature and contents of it; and they speak of nothing more than what they receive out of the fulness of Christ. And how can we otherwise judge, but that those that have a hearty love to Christ, and can, upon a good ground, think and speak such high things concerning themselves, must needs be heartily disposed, and mightily strengthened for the practice of holiness?

3dly, Because faith hath such a natural tendency to dispose and strengthen the soul for the practice of holiness, we have cause to judge it a meet instrument to accomplish every part of that practice in an acceptable manner. Those that with a due affection believe stedfastly on Christ for the free gift of all his salvation, may find, by experience, that they are carried forth by that faith, according to the measure of its strength or weakness, to love God heartily, because God hath loved them first ^{*}; to praise him, to pray unto him in the name of Christ [†]; to be patient with cheerfulness under all afflictions, giving thanks to the Father, that hath called them to his heavenly inheritance [‡]; to love all the children of God, out of love to their heavenly Father [§]: to walk as Christ walked ^{||}; and to give themselves up to live to Christ in all things, as constrained by his love in dying for them [¶]. We have a cloud of witnesses concerning the excellent

^{*} 1 John iv. 19. [†] Eph. v. 20. John xvi. 26, 27.
[‡] Col. i. 11, 12. [§] 1 John v. 1. ^{||} 1 John ii. 6.
[¶] 2 Cor. v. 14.

lent works that were produced by faith ^d. And tho' trusting on Christ be accounted such a slight and contemptible thing, yet I know no work of obedience which it is not able to produce. And note the excellent manner of working by faith. By it we live and act in all good works, as people in Christ, as raised above ourselves and our natural state, by partaking of him and his salvation; and we do all in his name, and on his account. This is the practice of that mysterious manner of living to God in holiness, which is peculiar to the Christian religion, wherein we live; *and yet not we, but Christ liveth in us* ^e. And who can imagine any other way but this for such a practice, while Christ and his salvation are known to us only by the gospel?

The explanation that I have made of the nature and office of true faith, and of its aptitude for its office, is sufficient to evidence, that it is *a most holy faith*, as it is called ^f; and that such a trusting on Christ as I have described, in its own nature, cannot have any tendency to licentiousness, but only to holiness; and that it rooteth and groundeth us in holiness, more than the mere accepting of any terms of salvation, and consenting to have Christ for our Lord, can do; and is more powerful to secure a holy practice, than any of those resolutions of obedience, or resignating acts, that some would have to be the great conditions of our salvation; which are indeed no better than hypocritical acts, if they be not produced by this faith. There is indeed a counterfeit dead faith, such as wicked men may have: and, if that tend to licentiousness, let not true faith be blamed; but

^d Heb. xi.^e Gal. ii. 20.^f Jude, ver. 20.

but rather mark the description of it which I have given, that you may not be deceived with a counterfeit faith instead of it.

I shall add something concerning the *efficient cause* of this excellent grace, and of our union with Christ by it; whereby it may appear, that it is not so slight and easy a way of salvation as some may imagine. The Author and Finisher of our faith, and of our union and fellowship with Christ by faith, is no less than the infinite Spirit of God, and God and Christ himself by the Spirit; for "by one Spirit we are all" "baptized into one body of Christ, and are all made" "to drink into one Spirit &c." "God granteth us," "according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with all might by his Spirit in the inner man," "that Christ may dwell in our hearts by faith ^b." If we do but consider the great effect of faith, that by it we are raised to live above our natural condition, by Christ and his Spirit living in us, we cannot rationally conceive, that it should be within the power of nature to do any thing that advanceth us so high. If God had done no more for us in our sanctification, than to restore us to our first natural holiness; yet this could not have been done without putting forth his own almighty power to quicken those that are dead in sin; how much more is this almighty power needful to advance us to this wonderful new kind of frame, wherein we live and act above all the power of nature, by a higher principle of life than was given to Adam in innocency, even by Christ and his Spirit living and acting in us? The natural man bringeth forth his offspring according to his image, by that

124-

^s 1 Cor. xii. 12, 13.

^b Eph. iii. 16, 17.

natural power of multiplying with which God blessed him at his first creation ; but the second Adam bringeth forth his offspring new-born according to his image, only by the Spirit^l. “ As many as receive him, even those that believe on his name, are born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God^k.” Christ took his own human nature into personal union with himself, in the womb of the Virgin Mary, by the Holy Ghost coming upon her, and the power of the Highest overshadowing her, the same power whereby the world was created^l. So he taketh us into mystical union and fellowship with himself, by no less than an infinite creating power ; for *we are the workmanship of God, created in Christ Jesus to good works^m* ; and, *if any man be in Christ, he is a new creatureⁿ*.

For the accomplishing this great work of our new creation in Christ, the Spirit of God doth first work upon our hearts by and with the gospel, to produce in us the grace of faith. For, if the gospel should come to us in word only, and not in power and in the Holy Ghost, Paul might labour to plant, and Apollos to water, without any success, because we cannot receive the things of the Spirit of God ; yea, we shall account them foolishness, until the Spirit of God enable us to discern them^o. We shall never come to Christ by any teaching of man, except we also hear and learn of the Father, and be drawn to Christ by his Spirit^p. And, when saving faith is wrought in us, the same Spirit giveth us fast hold of Christ

^l John iii. 5.^k John i. 12, 13.^l Luke i. 55.^m Eph. ii. 10.ⁿ 2 Cor. v. 17.^o 1 Thess. i. 5.^p 1 Cor. iii. 6. & ii. 14.^p John vi. 44, 45.

Christ by it. As he openeth the mouth of faith to receive Christ, so he filleth it with Christ; or else the acting of faith would be like a dream of one that thinketh he eateth and drinketh, and when he awaketh he findeth himself empty. The same Spirit of God did both give that faith whereby miracles were wrought, and did work also the miracles by it: so also the same Spirit of Christ doth work saving faith in us, and doth answer the aim and end of that faith, by giving us union and fellowship with Christ by it: so that none of the glory of this work belongeth to faith, but only to Christ and his Spirit. And indeed, faith is of such an humble self-denying nature, that it ascribeth nothing that it receiveth, to itself, but all to the grace of God: and therefore God saveth us by faith, that all the glory may be ascribed to his free grace¹. If Adam had strength enough in innocency to perform the duty of faith as well as we; yet it will not follow, that he had strength enough to raise himself above his natural state, into union with Christ; because faith doth not unite us to Christ by its own virtue, but by the power of the Spirit working by it, and with it. Thus are we first passive, and then active, in this great work of mystical union; we are first apprehended of Christ, and then we apprehend Christ. Christ entereth first into the soul, to join himself to it, by giving it the spirit of faith: and so the soul receiveth Christ and his Spirit by their own power; as the sun first enlighteneth our eyes, and then we can see it by its own light. We may note further, to the glory of the grace of God, that this union is fully accomplished by Christ giving the spirit of faith to us,
even

¹ Rom. iv. 16.

even before we act that faith in the reception of him; because, by this grace or spirit of faith, the soul is inclined and disposed to an active receiving of Christ. And, no doubt, Christ is thus united to many infants, who have the spirit of faith, and yet cannot act faith, because they are not come to the use of their understandings: but those of riper years, that are joined passively to Christ by the spirit of faith, will also join themselves with him actively, by the act of faith; and, until they act this faith, they cannot know or enjoy their union with Christ, and the comfort of it, or make use of it, in acting any other duties of holiness acceptably in this life.

D I R E C T I O N V.

We cannot attain to the practice of true holiness by any of our endeavours, while we continue in our natural state, and are not partakers of a new state by union and fellowship with Christ through faith.

E X P L I C A T I O N.

IT is evident, all have not that precious faith whereby Christ dwelleth in our hearts; yea the number of those that have it is small, comparatively to the whole world that lieth in wickedness^{*}; and many of those that at length attain unto it, do continue without it for some considerable time[†]. And though some may have the spirit of faith given to them from their mother's womb (as John the Baptist[‡]); yet even in them there is a *natural* being by generation, before there can be a *spiritual* being by rege-

[†] 1 John v. 19, 20.
15. 44.

^{*} Eph. ii. 12.

[‡] Luke i.

regeneration^u. Hence ariseth the consideration of two states or conditions of the children of men, in matters that appertain to God and godliness; the one of which is vastly different from the other. Those that have the happiness of a new birth and creation in Christ by faith, are thereby placed in a very excellent state, consisting in the enjoyment of the righteousness of Christ, for their justification; and of the spirit of Christ, to live by, in holiness here, and glory for ever; as hath already appeared. Those that are not in Christ by faith, cannot be in a better state than that which they received together with their nature from the first Adam, by being once born and created in him, or than they can attain to by the power of that nature, with any such help as God is pleased to afford to it. This latter I call a natural state; because it consisteth in such things as we have either received by natural generation, or can attain to by natural power through divine assistance; as the scripture calleth man in this state the *natural man*^w. The former I call a *new state*, because we enter into it by a new birth in Christ; and I may call it a *spiritual state*, according to the scripture; because it is received from Christ the quickening Spirit; and the *natural* and *spiritual* man are opposed^x, though some call both these states spiritual, because the everlasting weal or woe of the soul or spirit of man is chiefly concerned in them.

It is a common error of those that are in a corrupt natural state, that they seek to reform their lives according to the law, without any thoughts that their
state

^u 1 Cor. xv. 46.
14, 15.

^w 1 Cor. ii. 14.

^x 1 Cor. ii.

state must be changed, before their lives can be changed from sin to righteousness. The Heathens, that knew nothing of a new state in Christ, were urged, by their own consciences, to practise several duties of the law according to the knowledge they had by the light of nature ^y. Israel, according to the flesh, had a zeal of God and godliness, and endeavoured to practise the written law, at least in external performances, while they were enemies to the faith of Christ. And Paul attained so far, that he was blameless in these external performances of the righteousness of the law, while he persecuted the church of Christ ^z. Some are so near the kingdom of God, while they continue in a natural state, that they are convinced of the spirituality of the law, that it bindeth us principally to love God with all our heart, soul, mind and strength; and to love our neighbour as ourselves, and to perform universal obedience to God, in all our inward thoughts and affections, as well as in all our outward actions, and to do all the duties that we owe to our neighbour, out of this hearty love ^a. And they struggle and labour with great earnestness to subdue their inward thoughts and affections to the law of God, and to abstain not only from some sins, but from all known sins, and perform every known duty of the law with their whole heart and soul, as they think; and are so active and intent in their devout practice, that they overwork their natural strength; and so fervent in their zeal, that they are ready even to kill their bodies with fastings and other macerations, that they may kill their sinful lusts.

They

^y Rom. ii. 14, 15. ^z Phil. iii. 6. ^a Mark xii.
33, 34.

They are strongly convinced, that holiness is absolutely necessary to salvation, and deeply affected with the terrors of damnation; and yet they were never so much enlightened in the mystery of the gospel, as to know that a new state in Christ is necessary to a new life; therefore they labour in vain to reform their natural state, instead of getting above it in Christ. And some of these, when they have mis-spent many years in striving against the stream of their lusts without any success, do at last fall miserably into despair of ever attaining to holiness, and turn to wallowing in the mire of their lusts, or are fearfully swallowed up with horror of conscience. There are several false opinions whereby such ignorant zealots encourage themselves in their fruitless endeavours. Some of them judge, that they are able to practise holiness, because they are not compelled to sin, and may abstain from it, if they will. To this they add, that Christ, by the merit of his death, hath restored that freedom of will to good, which was lost by the fall, and hath set nature upon its legs again; and that, if they endeavour to do what lieth in them, Christ will do the rest, by assisting them with the supplies of his saving grace; so they trust upon the grace of Christ to help them in their endeavours. They plead further, that it would not consist with the justice of God to punish them for sin, if they could not avoid it; and that it would be in vain for the ministers of the gospel to preach to them, and exhort them to any saving duty, if they cannot perform it. They produce examples of Heathens, and of such as had the name of Christians without any acquaintance with the faith that I

have

have described, who have attained to a great excellency in religious words and works.

My work at present is, to deliver those ignorant zealots from their fruitless tormenting labours, by bringing them to despair of the attainment of holiness in a natural state, that they may seek it only in a new state by faith in Christ, where they may certainly find it without such tormenting labour and anxiety of spirit. For this end, I shall confirm the truth asserted in the direction, and fortify it against the forementioned false opinions, by the ensuing considerations.

First, The foundation of this assertion is firmly laid in the directions already explained, and confirmed by many places of scripture. For, if all endowments necessary to enable us for a holy practice, be to be had only in a state of union and fellowship with Christ by faith, and faith itself not by the natural power of free-will, but by the power of Christ, coming into the soul by his spirit, to unite us with himself; who seeth not, that the attainment of true holiness by any of our most vigorous endeavours, while we continue in our natural condition, is altogether hopeless? I need add no more, were it not to shew more fully what abundance of light the scripture affordeth to guide us aright in this part of our way, that those who wander out of it, by following any false light of their own, or others corrupted judgments, may find themselves the more inexcusable.

Secondly, It is evident, that we cannot practise true holiness, while we continue in a natural state; because we must be *born again of water, and of the Spi-*

rit, or else *we cannot enter into the kingdom of God*^b; and *we are created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained, that we should walk in them*^c. If we could love God and our neighbour as the law requireth, without a new birth and creation, we might live without them; for Christ hath said, *This do, and thou shalt live*^d. Now a new birth and creation is more than a mere reforming and repairing our natural state. If we were put into a certain state and condition by the first birth and creation, much more by the second. For the first produceth the substance of a man as well as a state; the second hath nothing to produce, but a new state of the same person. And note, that we were first created and born in Adam, the natural man; but our new birth and creation is in Christ, the spiritual man. And, if any man be in Christ, he is in a new state, far different from the state of Adam before the fall: he is wholly a new creature; as it is written, *old things are past away; behold, all things are become new*^e.

Thirdly, It is positively asserted by the apostle Paul, that *those that are in the flesh, cannot please God*^f. Many are too overly and negligent in considering the sense of this gospel phrase, what it is to be in the flesh. They understand no more by it than to be sinful, or to be addicted inordinately to please the sensitive appetite. They should consider, that the apostle speaketh here of *being in the flesh*, as the cause of sinfulness; as, in the next verse, he speaketh of *being in the Spirit*, as the cause of holiness: and, whatever cause it be, it must needs be distinct from its effect. Sin is a property

^b John iii. 3, 5.^c Eph. ii. 10.^d Luke x. 28.^e 2 Cor. v. 17.^f Rom. viii. 8.

property of the *flesh*, or something that dwelleth in the *flesh* ^k, and therefore it is not the *flesh* itself. The *flesh* is that which *lusteth against the spirit* ^h, and therefore it is not merely sinful lusting. The true interpretation is, that by *flesh* is meant the nature of man, as it is corrupted by the fall of Adam, and propagated from him to us, in that corrupt state, by natural generation; and to *be in the flesh* is to be in a natural state; as to *be in the Spirit*, is to be in a new state, by the Spirit of Christ dwelling in us ⁱ. The corrupt nature is called *flesh*, because it is received by carnal generation; and the new nature is called *spirit*, because it is received by spiritual regeneration. "That which is born of the *flesh*, is *flesh*; and that which is born of the *Spirit*, is *spirit* ^k." So the apostle, if he be rightly understood, hath said enough to make us despair utterly of attaining to true holiness, while we continue in a natural state.

Fourthly, The apostle testifieth, that those that have been *taught as the truth is in Jesus*, have learned to avoid the former sinful conversation, by *putting off the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts*; and by *putting on the new man, which, after God, is created in righteousness, and true holiness* ⁱ. Putting off the *old man*, and putting on the *new man*, is the same thing with not being in the *flesh*, but in the *Spirit*, in the foregoing testimony; that is, putting off our natural state, and putting on a new state, by union and fellowship with Christ. The apostle himself sheweth, that by the new man is meant that excellent state where Christ is all, and in all ^m. There-

G 2

fore

^k Rom. vii. 18.^h Gal. v. 17.ⁱ Rom. viii. 9.^m John iii. 6.ⁱ Eph. iv. 21, 22, 24.^m Col. iii. 11.

fore by the *old man* must needs be meant the natural state of man, wherein he is without the saving enjoyment of Christ: which is called old, because of the new state to which believers are brought by their regeneration in Christ. This is a manner of expression peculiar to the gospel, as well as the former, and as slightly considered by those that think that the apostle's meaning is only, that they should put off sinfulness, and put on holiness in their conversation; and so they think to become new men by turning over a new leaf in their practice, and leading a new life. Let them learn here, that the *old* and *new* man are two contrary states, containing in them, not only sin and holiness, but all other things that dispose and incline us to the practice of them; and that the old man must be put off, as crucified with Christ, before we can be freed from the practice of sinⁿ. And therefore we cannot lead a new life, until we have first gotten a new state by faith in Christ. Let me add here, that the meaning of the apostle is the same^o, where he directeth us to put on the Lord Jesus Christ, as the means whereby we may cast off the deeds of darkness, and walk honestly, as in the day-time; not fulfilling the lusts of the flesh.

Fifthly, Our natural state hath several properties that wholly disable us for the practice of holiness, and enslave us to the practice of sin, while we continue in it. Here I shall shew, that the *old man*, the *flesh*, or *natural state*, is not only sin, as some would have it; but it containeth in it several things, which I shall name, that

ⁿ Rom. vi. 6, 7.

^o Rom. xiii. 12, 13, 14.

that make it to be sinful, besides several other things that make it miserable. I have shewed, that in Christ we have all endowments necessary to frame us for godliness; so, in our fleshly state, we have all things contrary to that holy frame. *One thing* belonging to our natural state, is the *guilt of sin*, even of Adam's first sin, and of the sinful depravation of our nature, and of all our own actual transgressions; and therefore we are by nature the children of wrath ^p, and under the curse of God. The benefit of remission of our sins, and freedom from condemnation, is not given to us in the flesh, or in a natural state, but only in Christ ^q. And can we imagine, that a man should be able to prevail against sin, while God is against him, and curseth him? *Another property*, inseparable from the former, is an *evil conscience*, which denounces the wrath of God against us for sin, and inclineth us to abhor him as our enemy, rather than to love him, as hath been shewed; or, if it be a blind conscience, it hardeneth us the more in our sins. *A third property*, is an *evil inclination*, tending only to sin; which therefore is called *sin that dwelleth in us*, and *the law of sin in our members*, that powerfully subdueth and captivateth us to the service of sin ^r. It is a fixed propensity to lust against the law without any deliberation; and therefore its lustings are not to be prevented by any diligence or watchfulness. "The mind of the flesh is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can

G 3

" be.

† Eph. ii. 3. q Rom. viii. 1. Eph. i. 7. r Rom. vii. 20, 23.

“be¹.” How vain then is it to plead, that they can do good if they will, when their minds and will itself are enslaved to sin. A *fourth property*, is *subjection to the power of the devil*, who is the god of this world, that hath blinded the minds of all that believe not¹, and will certainly conquer all whom he fighteth with upon his own dunghil; that is in a natural state. And, from all these properties, we may well conclude, that our natural state hath the property, never to be good, to be stark dead in sin², according to the sentence denounced against the first sin of mankind in Adam, “In the day that thou eatest³ thereof, thou shalt surely die⁴.” For you can no more bring it to holiness, by any the most vehement motives and endeavours, than you can bring a dead carcase to life, by chafing and rubbing it. You can stir up no strength or fortifying grace in the natural man by such motives and endeavours; because there is no strength in him to be stirred up⁵. Tho’ you do all that lieth in you to the utmost, while you are in this flesh, you can do nothing but sin; for there is no good thing in you: as the apostle Paul sheweth by his own experience. “I know in that in me, “(that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing⁶.”

Sixthly, We have no good ground to trust on Christ to help us to will or to do that which is acceptable to him, while we continue in our natural state; or to imagine, that freedom of will to holiness is restored to us by the merit of his death. For, as it hath been already shewed, Christ aimed at a higher end, in his incarnation, death, and resurrection,

¹ Rom. viii. 7.² 2 Cor. iv. 4.³ Eph. ii. 1.⁴ Gen. ii. 17.⁵ Rom. v. 6.⁶ Rom. vii. 18.

tion, than the restoring the decay and ruins of our natural state. He aimed to advance us to a new state, more excellent than the state of nature ever was, by union and fellowship with himself; that we might live to God, not by the power of a natural free-will, but by the power of his Spirit living and acting in us. So we may conclude, that our natural state is irrecoverable and desperate, because Christ, the only Saviour, did not aim at the recovery of it. It is neither holy nor happy, but subject to sin, and to all miseries, as long as it remaineth. Even those that are in a new state in Christ, and do serve the law of God with their mind, do yet with their flesh serve the law of sin^a, as far as it remaineth in them, it lusteth against the spirit^a; and it remaineth dead, because of sin, even when the spirit is life to them, because of righteousness^b; and must be wholly abolished by death, before we can be perfected in that holiness and happiness that is by faith in Christ. After God had promised salvation by Christ, the seed of the woman, he placed cherubims, and a flaming sword, to keep man out of paradise; thereby teaching him, that his first state was lost without hope, and that the happiness intended for him, was wholly new. Our old natural man was not revived and reformed by the death of Christ, but crucified together with him, and therefore to be abolished and destroyed out of us by virtue of his death^c. It is like the parts of a garment infected with the plague of leprosy, which was to be rent off as incurable, that the garment might be clean^d. “If Christ be not in us,

G 4

we

^a Rom. vii. 25. ^a Gal. v. 17. ^b Rom. viii. 10.
^c Rom. vi. 6. ^d Lev. xiii. 56.

we are reprobates^e, i. e. we are in a state which God hath rejected from partaking of his salvation; so that we are not to expect any assistance from God to make us holy in it, but rather to deliver us from it.

Seventhly, This doth not at all discharge those that are in a natural state from obligation to holiness of life, nor render them excusable for their sins at the tribunal of God's justice. For "God hath made man upright, but they sought out many inventions^f." Observe well the words of this text, and you will find, that all they who have sought out many inventions, rather than upright walking, are comprehended in man that was at first made upright. And *man*, in the text, signifieth all mankind. The first Adam was all mankind, as Jacob and Esau were two nations in the womb of Rebecca^g. God made us all, in our first parent, according to his own image, able and inclined to do his law; and, in that pure nature, our obligation to obedience was first laid upon us; and the first wilful transgression, whereby our first parent bereaved himself of the image of God, and brought upon himself the sentence of death, was our sin as well as his; for *in one man, Adam, all have sinned, and so death is passed upon all^h*, because all mankind were in Adam's loins, when the first sin was committed; even as Levi may be said to have paid tithes in Abraham before he was born; because, when his father Abraham paid tithes to Melchizedek, he was yet in his loinsⁱ. That the promise of God, that he will not charge

^e 2 Cor. xiii. v. ^f Eccl. vii. 29. ^g Gen. xxv. 23.
^h Rom. v. 12. ⁱ Heb. vii. 9, 10.

charge the iniquities of parents upon their children, is a promise belonging to the new covenant confirmed in the blood of Christ; and it is yea and amen to us only in Christ; in whom we have another nature than that which our parents conveyed to us; so that we cannot justly claim the benefit of it in our old natural state^k. Those that account their impotency a sufficient plea to excuse them or others, shew that they were never truly humbled for that great wilful transgression of all mankind in the loins of Adam. Inability to pay debt, excuseth not a debtor that hath lavished away his estate; neither doth drunkenness excuse the mad actings of a drunkard, but rather aggravates his sin. And our impotency consisteth not in a mere want of executive power, but in the want of a willing mind, to practice true holiness and righteousness. Naturally we love it not, we like it not, but lust against it^l, and hate the light^m. If men in a natural state had a hearty love and liking to true holiness, and a desire and serious endeavour to practice it out of hearty love, and yet failed in the event, then they might under some pretence plead for their excuse, (as some do for them), that they were compelled to sin by an inevitable fate. But none have just cause to plead any such thing for their excuse; because none endeavour to practice true holiness out of hearty love to it, until the good work be begun in their souls; and, when God hath begun, he will perfect itⁿ; and will in the mean time accept their ready mind though they fall short in performance^o. “How abominable then
“ and

^k Jer. xxxi. 29, 30, 31. and 2 Cor. i. 20. ^l Gal. v. 17.
^m John iii. 20. ⁿ Phil. i. 6. ^o 2 Cor. viii. 12.

“and filthy is man, that drinketh iniquity as water?” that cannot practise holiness, because he will not? This is their just condemnation, “that they love darkness rather than light.” They deserve to be partakers with the devils in torments, as they partake with them in evil lusts; and their inability to do good,* will no more excuse them, than it excuseth the devils.

Eightly, Neither will this assertion make it a vain thing to preach the gospel to natural people, and to exhort them to true repentance, and faith in Christ, for their conversion and salvation. For the design of our preaching is not to bring them to holiness in their natural state, but to raise them above it, and to present them perfect in Christ, in the performance of those duties†. And though they cannot perform those duties by their natural strength; yet the gospel is made effectual for their conversion and salvation, by the power of the Holy Ghost, which accompanieth the preaching of it, to quicken those that are dead in sin, and to create them anew in Christ, by giving to them repentance unto life, and a lively faith in Christ. The gospel cometh to the elect of God, not only in word, but also in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in such assurance, that they receive it with joy of the Holy Ghost‡. “The gospel is the ministration of the Spirit, that giveth life”; it is mighty through God§. It dependeth not at all upon the power of our free-will, to make it successful for our conversion; but it conveyeth into
the

* Job xv. 16. † Col. i. 28. ‡ 1 Thess. i. 5, 6.
§ 2 Cor. iii. 6—8. † 2 Cor. x. 4.

the soul that life and power whereby we receive and obey it. Christ can make those that are dead in sin to hear his voice, and liveⁿ. Therefore he can speak to them by his gospel, and command them to repent and believe with good success, as well as he could say to dead carcases, *Talitha cumi*^w, *Lazarus come forth*^x; and to the sick of the palsy, *Arise, take up thy bed, and go into thine house*^y.

Ninthly, There is no reason that the examples of heathen philosophers, or any Jews or Christians by outward profession, that have lived without the saving knowledge of God in Christ, should move us, by their wise sayings and renowned attainments, in the practice of devotion and morality, to recede from this truth, that hath been so fully confirmed out of the holy scriptures. Have we not cause to judge, that the apostle Paul, while he was a zealous Pharisee, and at least some few of the great multitude of the Jews in his time, that were zealous of the law, and had the instruction of the holy scriptures, attained as near to that true holiness, as the heathen philosophers, or any others in their natural state? Yet Paul, after he was enlightened with the saving knowledge of Christ, judged himself the chief of sinners, in his highest former attainments; though, in the judgment of others, he was blameless touching the righteousness which is in the law; and he found it necessary to begin to live to God in a new way by faith in Christ, and to suffer the loss of all his former attainments, and to count them but dung, that he might win Christ^z.

And

^w John v. 25. ^x Mark v. 41. ^y John xi. 43, 44.
^z Matt. ix. 6. ^z 1 Tim. i. 15. Phil. iii. 6, 7, 8.

And none of the great multitude of Jews that followed after the law of righteousness, did ever attain unto it, while they sought it not by faith in Christ^a. What performances are greater in outward appearance, than for a man to give all his goods to the poor, and to give his body to be burnt? and yet the scripture alloweth us to suppose that this may be done without true charity, and therefore without any true holiness of the heart and life^b. Men in a natural state may have strong convictions of the infinite power, wisdom, justice, and goodness of God, and of the judgment to come, and the everlasting happiness of the godly, and torments of the wicked: and these convictions may stir them up, not only to make a high profession, and to utter rare sayings concerning God and godliness; but also to labour with great earnestness to avoid all known sin, to subdue their lusts, to perform universal obedience to God in all known duties, and to serve him with their lives and estates to the utmost, and to extort out of their hearts some kind of love to God and godliness, that, if possible, they may escape the terrible torments of hell, and procure everlasting happiness by their endeavours: yet all their love to God is but forced and feigned; they have no hearty liking to God or his service; they account him a hard master and his commandments grievous, and they repine and fret inwardly at the burden of them; and, were it not for fear of everlasting fire, they would little regard the enjoyment of God in heaven; and they

^a Rom. ix. 31, 32.^b 1 Cor. xiii. 3.

they would be glad if they might have the liberty to enjoy their lusts without danger of damnation. The highest preferment of those that are born only after the flesh in Abraham's family, is but to be children of the bond woman^c. And though they toil more in God's service than many of his dear children; yet God accepteth not their service, because their best performances are slavish, without any child-like affections towards God, and no better than glistering sins. And yet these natural men are not at all beholden to the goodness of their natures for these counterfeit shews of holiness, or for the least abstaining from the grossest sin. If God should leave men fully to their own natural corruptions, and to the power of satan (as they deserve), all shew of religion and morality should be quickly banished out of the world, and we should grow past feeling in wickedness, and like to the cannibals, who are as good by nature as ourselves. But God, that can restrain the burning of the fiery furnace without quenching it, and the flowing of water without changing its nature, doth also restrain the working of natural corruption without mortifying it: and, through the greatness of his wisdom and power, he maketh his enemies to yield feigned obedience to him^d, and to do many things good for the matter of them, though they can do nothing in a right holy manner. He hath appointed several means to restrain our corruptions; as the law, terrors of conscience, terrible judgments and rewards in this life, magistrates, human laws, labour for
necessa-

^c Gal. iv. 23.^d Psal. lxi. 3.

necessaries, as food and raiment. And those gospel means that are effectual for sanctification, serve also for restraint of sin. God hath gracious ends in this restraint of sin, that his church may be preserved, and his gospel preached in the world; and that these natural men may be in a better capacity to receive the instructions of the gospel: and that such of them that are chosen, may, in due time, be converted; and that those of them that are not truly converted, may enjoy more of the goodness of God here, and suffer the less torments hereafter. As vile and wicked as the world is, we have cause to praise, and to magnify the free goodness of God, that it is no worse.

D I R E C T I O N VI.

Those that endeavour to perform sincere obedience to all the commands of Christ, as the condition whereby they are to procure for themselves a right and title to salvation, and a good ground to trust on him for the same, do seek their salvation by the works of the law, and not by the faith of Christ, as he is revealed in the gospel: and they shall never be able to perform sincerely any true holy obedience by all such endeavours.

E X P L I C A T I O N.

FOR the understanding the terms of this direction, note here, that I take salvation as comprehending justification, as well as other saving benefits; and sincere obedience as comprehending holy resolutions, as well as the fulfilling of them. The most of men, that have any sense of religion, are prone

prone to imagine, that the sure way to establish the practice of holiness and righteousness, is to make it the procuring condition of the favour of God and all happiness. This may appear by the various false religions that have prevailed most in the world. In this way the heathens were brought to their best devotion and morality, by the knowledge of the judgment of God, that those that violate several of the great duties to God and their neighbour, are worthy of death; and by their consciences accusing or excusing them, according to the practice of them^s. Our consciences are informed by the common light of natural reason, that it is just with God to require us to perform these duties, that we may avoid his wrath, and enjoy his favour. And we cannot find any better way than this to obtain happiness, or to stir up ourselves to duty, without divine revelation. Yet, because our own consciences testify, that we often fail in the performance of these duties, we are inclined by self-love to persuade ourselves, that our sincere endeavours to do the best we can, shall be sufficient to procure the favour of God, and pardon for all our failings. Thus we see, that the persuasion of salvation by the condition of sincere obedience, hath its original from our corrupt natural reason, and is part of the wisdom of this world. It is none of *the wisdom of God in a mystery, that hidden wisdom which God ordained before the world to his glory*; it is none of those things of the Spirit of God, which *have not entered into the heart of man, and which the natural man cannot receive; for they*

are

*are foolishness to him; neither can he know them, for they are spiritually discerned*¹. It is none of the foolishness of preaching whereby it pleased God to save them that believe². And though we have a better way revealed to us in the gospel, for the enjoyment of the favour of God, and holiness itself, and all salvation, without any procuring condition of works, by the free gift of God's grace through faith in Christ; yet it is very difficult to persuade men out of a way they are naturally addicted to, and that hath forestalled and captivated their judgments, and is bred in their bone, and therefore cannot easily be gotten out of the flesh. Most of those that live under the hearing and profession of the gospel, are not brought to hate sin as sin, and to love godliness for itself, tho' they be convinced of the necessity of it to salvation; and therefore they cannot love it heartily. The only means they can take to bring themselves to it, is to stir up themselves to a hypocritical practice in their old natural way, that they may avoid hell, and get heaven by their works. And their own consciences witness, that the zeal and love that they have for God and godliness, their self-denial, sorrow for sin, strickness of life, are in a manner forced and extorted from them by slavish fear and mercenary hope; so that they are afraid, that, if they should trust on Christ for salvation by free grace without works, the fire of their zeal and devotion would be quickly extinguished, and they should grow careless in religion, and let loose the reins to their lusts, and bring certain damnation upon

¹ 1 Cor. ii. 6, 7, 9, 14.² 1. Cor. i. 21.

upon themselves. This moveth them to account them the only Boanerges and powerful preachers that preach little or none of the doctrine of free grace, but rather spend their pains in rebuking sin, and urging people to get Christ and his salvation by their works, and thundering hell and damnation against sinners. It hath been farther observed, that some that have contended much for salvation by free grace, without any condition of works, have fallen into Antinomian opinions, and licentious practices. The experience of these things hath much prevailed with some learned and zealous men of late amongst ourselves, to recede from the doctrine of justification by faith, without works, formerly professed unanimously, and strongly defended by the protestants against the papists, as a principle article of true religion. They have persuaded themselves, that such a way of justification is ineffectual, yea destructive to sanctification; and that the practice of sincere obedience cannot be established against Antinomian dotages and prevailing lusts, except it be made the necessary condition of our justification, and so of our eternal salvation. Therefore they conclude, that God hath certainly made sincere obedience to be the condition of our salvation. And they have endeavoured to new-model the protestant doctrine, and to interpret the holy scriptures in a way agreeable and subservient to this their only sure foundation of holiness.

But I hope to shew, that this their imagined sure foundation of holiness was never laid by the holy God; but that it is rather an error in the foundation, pernicious to the true faith, and to holiness of

life. I account it an error especially to be abhorred and detested, because we are so prone to be seduced by it, and because it is an error whereby satan, transforming himself into an angel of light, and a patron of holiness, hath greatly withstood the gospel in the apostles times, and stirred up men to persecute it out of zeal for the law; and hath since prevailed to set up and maintain popery, whereby the mystery of iniquity worketh apace in these days, to corrupt the purity of the gospel among protestants, and to heal the deadly wound that was given to popery by preaching the doctrine of justification by faith without works.

One thing asserted in the direction against this fundamental error, is, that it is *a way of salvation by the works of the law*, and not by the faith of Christ, as revealed in the gospel: tho' the maintainers of it would have us believe, that it is the only way of the gospel; that so we may not doubt of its power and efficacy for our justification, sanctification, and our whole salvation. Their reasons are, because the law, as a covenant of works, requireth us to do all its commandments perfectly, that we may live; whereas they plead only for a milder condition of sincere doing, that we may live. And they plead not for doing duties, as obliged thereunto by the authority of the law given of God by Moses, but only in obedience to the commands of Christ in the gospel. Neither do they plead for salvation by sincere obedience without Christ, but only by Christ, and thro' his merit and righteousness. And they acknowledge, that both salvation itself, and
sincere

sincere obedience, are given to them freely, by the grace of Christ; so that all is of grace. They acknowledge also, that their salvation is by faith, because sincere obedience is wrought in them by believing the gospel, and is included in the nature of that faith, which is the entire condition of our salvation: and some call it the resignating act of faith. But all these reasons are but a fallacious vizard upon a legal way of salvation, to make it look like pure gospel; as I shall evince by the following particulars.

First, All that seek salvation by the sincere performance of good works, as the procuring condition, are condemned by the apostle Paul, for seeking righteousness by the works of the law and not by faith^b, and for seeking to be justified by the law, and falling from the grace of Christ^c. This one assertion, if it can be proved, is enough to pluck off the fallacious vizard from the condition of sincere obedience, and to make men abhor it as a damning legal doctrine, that bereaveth its followers of all salvation by Christ. And the proof of it is not difficult to persons that warily consider a point of so great moment for their salvation. The Jews and judaizing Christians, against whom the apostle chiefly disputed in his whole controversy, did not profess any hope of being justified by perfect obedience, according to the rigour of the law, but only by such obedience as they accounted to be sincere, and not hypocritical. And we have no cause to doubt, but that the judaizing Galatians had learned

H 2

by

^b Rom. ix. 32.

^c Gal. v. 4.

by the gospel to distinguish sincere obedience from hypocrisy. The Jewish religion bound all that professed it, to acknowledge themselves to be sinners; as appeareth by their anniversary humiliation on the day of atonement, and several other rites of the law, and many clear testimonies in the oracles of God, that were committed to them^k. Yet they knew they were bound to turn to the Lord with all their hearts, in sincerity and uprightness, and that God would accept of sincere obedience; for which cause they might better put it for the condition of the law, than we can of the gospel^l. So that, if the apostle had disputed against those that held only perfect obedience to be the condition of justification, he had contended with his own shadow. And they might as readily judge sincere obedience to be the condition of justification under the law, as we can judge it to be the condition under the gospel. Neither doth the apostle condemn them merely for accounting sincere obedience to the law as given by Moses, to be the condition of their justification, but more generally for seeking salvation by their own works. And he alledgeth against them, that Abraham, who lived before the law of Moses, was not justified by any of his works, tho' he did perform sincere obedience; and that David, who lived under the law of Moses, was not justified by his works, tho' he performed sincere obedience, and was as much bound to obey the law given by Moses, as we are to obey any commands of Christ

^k Psal. cxliiii. 2. Prov. x. 9. Eccl. vii. 20.
li. 6, 10. Deut. vi. 5. and xxx. 10.

^l Psal.

in the gospel ^a. Neither doth he condemn them for seeking their salvation only by works, without respecting at all the grace and salvation that is by Christ; for the judaizing Galatians were yet professors of the grace and salvation of Christ, though they thought obedience to the law a necessary condition for the partaking of it, as also many other judaizing believers did. And, doubtless, they accounted themselves obliged thereunto, not only by the authority of Moses, but of Christ also, whom they owned as their Lord and Saviour. And we may be sure it was no damning error, to account Moses's law obliging at that time; for many thousands of the Jews, that were sound believers, held the ceremonies of Moses to be in force at that time, and Paul was tender towards them in it ^a. And other Jews sought justification, not only by their sincere works, but also by trusting on the promise made to Abraham, and on their priesthood and sacrifices; which were types of Christ. And the most legal Pharisees would thank God for their good works, as proceeding from his grace ^a. And they could as well acknowledge their salvation to be by faith, as the assertors of salvation by sincere obedience can in these days; for they accounted, that their sincere obedience was wrought in them by believing the word of God, which contained gospel as well as legal doctrine in it; and therefore that it must be included in the nature of faith, if faith was taken for the condition of their whole salvation. Let the assertors of

H 3

the

^a Rom. iv. 2, 3, 5, 6. ^b Acts xxi. 20, 26. and xv. 5.
^c Luke xviii. 12.

the condition of sincere obedience learn from hence, that they are building again that Judaism which the apostle Paul destroyed, whereby the Jews stumbled at Christ^p, and the Galatians were in danger of falling from Christ and grace^q, and let them beware of falling under that curse which he hath denounced, on this very occasion, against any man or angel that shall preach any other gospel than that which he hath preached^r.

Secondly, The difference between the law and gospel doth not at all consist in this, that the one requireth perfect doing; the other, only sincere doing: but in this, that the one requireth doing; the other, no doing, but believing for life and salvation. Their terms are different, not only in degree, but in their whole nature.

The apostle Paul opposeth the believing required in the gospel, to all doing for life, as the condition proper to the law^s. "The law is not of faith; but the man that doth them, shall live in them^t. To him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness." If we seek salvation by never so easy and mild a condition of works, we do thereby bring ourselves under the terms of the law, and do become debtors to fulfil the whole law in perfection, though we intended to engage ourselves only to fulfil it in part^u, for the law is a complete declaration of the only terms whereby God will judge all that are not brought to despair of procuring

^p Rom. ix. 32. ^q Gal. v. 2, 4. ^r Gal. i. 8, 9.
^s Gal. iii. 12. ^t Rom. iv. 5. ^u Gal. v. 3.

curing salvation by any of their own works, and to receive it as a gift freely given to them by the grace of God in Christ. So that all that seek salvation, right or wrong, knowingly or ignorantly, by any works, less or more, whether invented by their own superstition, or commanded by God in the Old or New Testament, shall at last stand or fall according to those terms.

Thirdly, Sincere obedience cannot be performed to all the commands of Christ in the gospel, except it be also performed to the moral law, as given by Moses, and as obliging us by that authority. Some asserters of the condition of salvation by sincere obedience to the commands of Christ, would fain be free from the authority of the law of Moses, because that justifieth none, but thundereth out a curse against all those that seek salvation by the works of it *. But, if they were at all justified by sincere works, their respect to Moses's authority would not hinder their success; for many that were good Christians, accounted themselves bound to obey, not only the moral, but the ceremonial law; and, if they had sought justification by any works, they would have sought it by those *. They knew not of any justification by sincere works, as commanded only in the gospel; yet, if they had erred in any thing absolutely necessary to salvation, the apostles would not have tolerated their weakness. And, whether they will or no, they must seek their salvation by the works of the moral law, as given by Moses, or else they can never get it by sincere obedience to the commands of

H 4

Christ.

* Gal. iii. 10, 11.

* Acts xx. 20, 21.

Christ. Christ never loved their new condition so well, as to abolish the Mosaical authority of the moral law, for the establishment of it. He came not to destroy the law and the prophets, but to fulfil them, in the practice required by them; and hath declared, that “those that break one of the least of these commandments, and teach men so, shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven^{*}.” He commandeth us to *do to men whatsoever we would they should do to us*, because *this is the law and the prophets*: which is sufficient to prove, that he would have us to account the law authoritative to oblige us in this matter. He requireth his disciples to observe and do whatsoever the scribes and pharisees bid them, because they sat in Moses’s seat[†].

And, to come to the point in hand, when Christ had occasion to answer the questions of those that were guilty of the same error that I am now dealing with, in seeking salvation by their own works, he shewed them, that they must obey the commands as they were already established by the Mosaical authority, in the scripture of the Old Testament: “What is written? how readeſt thou? This do, and thou shalt live[‡]. If thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments; which are, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery,” &c.

In like manner, the apostles of Christ urged the performance of moral duties upon believers, by the authority of the law given by Moses. The apostle Paul

^{*} Matt. v. 17, 19. [†] Matt. xxiii. 2, 3. [‡] Luke x. 26, 28.

Paul exhorteth to *love one another*; because he *that loveth another, hath fulfilled the law^a*: and to *honour our father and mother, which is the first commandment with promise^b*. The apostle John exhorteth to love others, as no new, but an old commandment. The apostle James exhorteth, *to fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*; and to keep all the commandments of the law, one as well as another; because he that said, *Do not commit adultery*, said also, *Do not kill^c*. Sound protestants have accounted the denial of the authority of the moral law of Moses to be an Antinomian error. And though our late prevaricators against Antinomianism maintain not this error; yet they establish a worse error, justification by their sincere gospel-works. I think the denomination of the Antinomians arose from this error. The law of Moses had its authority at first from Christ; for Christ was the Lord God of Israel, that ordained the law by angels on mount Sinai, in the hand of Moses, a Mediator for the Israelites, who were then his only church, and with whom we believing Gentiles are now joined, as fellow-members of one and the same body^d. And though Christ hath since abrogated some of the commandments then given by Moses, concerning figurative ceremonies and judicial proceedings; yet he hath not annulled the obligative authority of the moral law, but hath left it in its full force, to oblige us in moral duties, that are still to be practised; as, when some acts of any parliament are repealed, the authority of the same parliament remaineth inviolable

^a Rom. xiii. 8.^b Eph. vi. 2.^c Jam. ii. 8,

10, 11.

^d Eph. iii. 6.

lable in other acts that are not repealed. I know they object, that the ten commands of the moral law, the ministration of death, written and engraven on stones, are also done away by Christ ^e. But this maketh altogether against their conditional covenant: for they are the ministration of death, and done away, not as they commanded perfect obedience, for even Christ himself commandeth us to be perfect ^f; but as they were conditions for procuring life, and avoiding death, established by a promise of life to the doers, and a curse to the breakers of them ^g. The covenant made with Israel on mount Sinai, is abolished by Christ, the Mediator of the new covenant ^h. And the Ten Commandments bind us not as they were words of that covenant ⁱ; I mean, they bind us not as conditions of that covenant, except we seek to be justified by works; for the law, as a covenant, doth still stand in force enough to curse those that seek salvation by their own works ^k; and, if abolished, it is only to those that are in Christ by faith ^l. But the Ten Commandments bind us still, as they were then given to a people that were at that time under the covenant of grace made with Abraham, to shew them what duties are holy, just, and good, well pleasing to God, and to be a rule for their conversation. The result of all is, that we must still practise moral duties, as commanded by Moses; but we must not seek to be justified by our practice. If we use them as a rule of life, not as conditions of justification, they can be no ministration of death, or killing letter unto

^e 2 Cor. iii. 7. ^f Matt. v. 48. ^g Gal. iii. 10, 12.
^h Heb. viii. 8, 9, 13. ⁱ Exod. xxxiv. 28. ^k Gal. iii. 10.
^l Gal. ii. 19, 20. Acts iii. 22--25. and xv. 10, 11.

unto us. Their perfection indeed maketh them to be harder terms to procure life by, but a better rule to discover all imperfections, and to guide us to that perfection which we should aim at. And it will be our wisdom not to part with the authority of the decalogue of Moses, until our new divines can furnish us with another system of morality as complete as that, and as excellently composed and ordered by the wisdom of God, and more authentic than that is.

Fourthly, Those that endeavour to procure Christ's salvation by their sincere obedience to all the commands of Christ, do act contrary to that way of salvation by Christ, free grace, and faith, discovered in the gospel, though they own it in profession never so highly.

1st. They act contrary to the way of salvation by Christ; for they would heal themselves, and save themselves from the power and pollution of sin, and procure God's favour, by performing sincere obedience, before they are come to Christ the only Physician and Saviour. They lay their own obedience lowest in the foundation of their salvation, and build the enjoyment of Christ upon it; who ought to be the only foundation. They would sanctify themselves, before they have a sure interest in Christ; and, *going about to establish their own righteousness, they do not submit themselves to the righteousness of God in Christ*^m. Sometimes they will call the righteousness of Christ, their legal righteousness, that they may make room for an evangelical righteousness of their own works, to be the immediate procuring cause of their justification by Christ; whereas the apostle Paul knew

^m Rom. x. 3, 4.

knew no evangelical righteousness but that of Christ, which he calleth *the righteousness of faith without the law* ^a, and not of the law ^b. Thus they make void Christ's salvation while they pretend to own it, and Christ profiteth them nothing. Christ is become of none effect to them, while they would be justified by the law ^c. If we would be saved by Christ, we must own ourselves dead, lost sinners, that can have no righteousness for justification but his, no life or ability to do good, until God bring us into union and fellowship with him.

2dly, They do also act contrary to salvation by grace, according to the true meaning of the gospel. For we are not saved by grace, as the supreme cause of salvation by the intervention of works, given and accepted by grace, as the procuring cause: in which sense we might be saved by grace, though by a covenant of works; as a servant that hath monies given him by his master, to purchase an annuity of his master at a low rate, may profess that he had an annuity given him freely, and yet that he hath purchased it, and may claim it as a due debt. But we are saved by grace, as the immediate and complete cause of our whole salvation, excluding procurement of our salvation by the condition of works, and claiming it by any law as a due debt. This scripture teacheth us, that there is a perfect opposition and utter irreconcilableness between salvation by grace and works: "If by grace, then is it no more of
" works; otherwise grace is no more grace: but, if
" it be of works, then is it no more grace; other-
" wise

^a Rom. iii. 21, 22. ^b Phil. iii. 9. ^c Gal. v. 2, 4.

“ wife work is no more work¹. So also there is an opposition between a reward reckoned of grace, and of debt²; between a promise of happiness by the law, and by grace³. God is so jealous of the glory of his free grace, that he will not save us by any works, though of his own working in us, lest any man should boast⁴. He knoweth when he healeth men by physic, or maintaineth them by the labour of their hands, they are prone to attribute the glory rather to the means they use, than to his sole bounty and goodness.

3dly, They do also act contrary to the way of salvation by faith: for, as I have shewed already, the faith which is required for our salvation in the gospel, is to be understood in a sense contrary to doing good works as a condition to procure our salvation, that so the true difference between the terms of the law and the gospel may be maintained. *Believing* is opposed to all *working* for salvation, and the *law of works* to the *law of faith*⁵. Therefore we must not here consider faith as a work of righteousness, as comprehending any works of righteousness performed or done as a condition to procure a right and title to Christ, as the hand whereby we work, to earn him as our bread and drink, as our wages; but only as the hand whereby we receive Christ, as freely given to us, or as the mouth whereby we eat and drink him; as hath been proved. God giveth a sufficient right to receive Christ and his salvation, by the free gospel-offer and invitation; so that he leaveth nothing for our faith to do, but to lay hold of him as a free gift, that the
glory

¹ Rom. xi. 6.² Rom. iv. 4.³ Rom. iv. 13, 16.⁴ Eph. ii. 9.⁵ Rom. iv. 5. & iii. 27. Eph. ii. 8, 9.

glory of our salvation may not be ascribed at all to our faith or works, but only to this free grace of God in Christ: "It is of faith, that it may be by grace *."

Fifthly, Christ or his apostles never taught a gospel that requireth such a condition of works for salvation as they plead for. The texts of scripture which they usually alledge for their purpose, are either contrary to it, or widely distant from it; as they might learn from many protestant interpreters, if their affection to a popish tenet had not blinded them. I shall instance briefly only in a few of those texts, whereby you may have some light to judge of the true meaning of the rest. That obedience of faith mentioned by the apostle Paul as the great design of gospel preaching^x, is as contrary to their condition of sincere obedience for salvation, as the law of faith is to the law of works^y. It is an obedience that consisteth in believing the report of the gospel; as the apostle explaineth himself^z. They have not all obeyed the gospel: for Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report? Faith is said to be imputed for righteousness, not because it is a work of righteousness itself, but because we do by it renounce all confidence in any righteous works whatsoever, and trust on him that justifieth the ungodly; as is clear by that very text which they usually pervert for their purpose^a. They grossly pervert these words of Paul^b, "Who will render to every man according to his deeds: to them who, by patient continuance in well doing, seek for glory, and honour, and immortality; eternal life." Where they will have Paul

* Rom. iv. 16.

x Rom. i. 5.

y Rom. iii. 27.

z Rom. x. 16.

a Rom. iv. 5.

b Rom. ii. 6, 7.

Paul to be declaring the terms of the gospel, when he is evidently declaring the terms of the law, to prove, that both Jews and Gentiles are all under sin, and that no flesh can be justified by the works of the law; as appeareth by the tenor of his following discourse. They join evidently with the papists against the concurrent judgment of the best protestant divines, in the interpretation of that text^d. “Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.” Where they will have James to deliver the doctrine of justification in more proper expressions than the apostle Paul, who teacheth justification by faith without works; though Paul treateth on this doctrine as his principal subject, and James doth only speak of it occasionally, as a motive to the practice of good works; whereby we may easily judge which of their expressions are to be taken for the most proper. Protestants have shewed sufficiently, that James speaketh not of a true saving faith, but of such a dead faith as devils have; not of justification in a proper sense, but of the declaration and manifestation of it by its fruits. Besides, he speaks of justification by works, as commanded in the law given by Moses; as appeareth by his citing the commandments of the law^e, which our contrivers of the new divinity would have nothing to do with in their model of the doctrine of justification. Another text alledged by them is^f, “Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city.” But the Greek word which is here translated

^c Rom. iii 9, 10.^d Jam. ii. 24.^e Ver. 8, 11,^f Rev. xxii. 14.

translated *right*, is translated *power* or *privilege*^k. It signifieth here a rightful possession of the fruit of the tree of life; and not a mere title to it. So this text proveth no more than what the protestants generally acknowledge, that good works are the way wherein we are to walk to the enjoyment and possession of the glory of Christ; though a title to Christ, and his glorious salvation, be freely given us without any procuring condition of works. They account also, that, when the happiness of heaven is called a reward, it must needs imply a procuring condition of works^k. But though it be called a reward, because it is given after the doing of good works, and because it recompenseth good works, better than any wages on earth can recompense the labourer; yet it is a reward of grace, not of debt^l; it is no proper wages, but a free gift^k. “For the wages of sin is death; but the gift^k of God is eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.”

Another thing asserted in the direction is, that those that endeavour to perform this sincere obedience, as the condition to procure a right and title to Christ and his salvation, *shall never be able to perform sincerely any true obedience by all such endeavours*. Tho’ they labour earnestly, and pray fervently, fast frequently, and oblige themselves to holiness by many vows, and press themselves to the practice of it by the most forcible motives, taken from the infinite power, justice, and knowledge, of God, the equity and goodness of his commands, the salvation of Christ, ever-
lasting

^k John i. 12.^l Rev. xxii. 12.

Matt. v. 12.

^j Rom. iv. 23.^k Rom. vi. 23.

lasting happiness and misery, or any other motive improved by the most affectionate meditation ; yet they shall never attain to the end which they aim at in such an erroneous way. They may restrain their corruptions, and bring themselves to many hypocritical slavish performances, whereby they may be esteemed among men, as eminent saints ; but they shall not be able to mortify one corruption, or to perform one duty in such a holy manner as God approveth. Yet here I censure only an error, not the life of the persons that maintain it. I have heard that some preach legally, and pray evangelically. I doubt not but the frame of their hearts and lives is rather according to their prayers than their sermons. Though Peter complied with Judaism in an outward act of profession ; yet he lived himself like a Christian¹. I affirm only, that no godly person did or could attain to his goodness in this erroneous way. And what a lamentable disappointment this to those that have attempted to alter the protestant doctrine, and to pervert and confound law and gospel, and have bred much contention in the church, that they might secure the practice of sincere obedience against Antinomian errors, by making it the procuring condition of their salvation ; when, after all this ado, the remedy is found to be as bad as the disease, equally unserviceable and destructive to that great end for which they designed it ; and that it hath an Antinomian effect and operation, contrary to the power of godliness ?

Much more might be said for the confutation of this novel doctrine : but, if this one thing be well
I proved,

¹ Gal. ii. 11, 14.

proved, it may be sufficient to make the zealous contrivers of it to be ashamed of their craft, and angry with themselves, and sorry that they have taken so much pains, and stretched their wits, to maintain such an unprofitable, un sanctifying opinion, It will be sufficient for the proof of it, if I shew, that the practice of true holiness cannot possibly be attained unto, by seeking to be saved by the works of the law; because I have already proved, that this doctrine of salvation by sincere obedience, is according to the terms of the law, and not of the gospel. And hereby those also may see their error, that ascribe justification only to the gospel, and sanctification to the law. Yet, because those asserters of the condition of sincere obedience will hardly be persuaded by what hath been said, that it is the way of the law of works; I shall, for their more full conviction, sufficiently manifest, that it is of no other nature and operation than any other doctrine that is proper to the law, and hath no better fruit: as I proceed to prove, by the following arguments, that holiness cannot be attained by seeking it by the law of works, that so it may appear not worthy to be called gospel doctrine.

1st, The way of salvation by the works of the law is contrary and destructive to those necessary means of a holy practice that have been laid down in the foregoing directions, and manifestly proved out of the holy scriptures. I have made it appear, that a hearty propensity to a holy practice cannot be attained without some good persuasion of our reconciliation with God by justification, and of our everlasting happiness, and of sufficient strength both to will and to perform our duty; and that these, and all other endowments

neces-

necessary to the same end, are to be had only in Christ, by union and fellowship with him; and that Christ himself, with all his fulness, is united to us by faith; which is not a condition to procure a right or title to Christ, but an instrument whereby we receive him actually into our hearts, by trusting on him for all salvation freely promised to us in the gospel. All these means of a holy practice are things wherein our spiritual life and happiness do consist; so that, if we have them, everlasting life is begun in us already: and, because they are the necessary means of a holy practice, therefore the beginning of everlasting life in us must not be placed after such a practice, as the fruit and consequent of it; but must go before it as the cause before the effect. Now, the terms of the law are directly contrary to this method. They place the practice of holiness before life, and make it to be the means and procuring cause of life; as Moses describeth them ^m, *The man that doth those things, shall live by them.* By these terms, you are first to do the holy duties commanded, before you have any interest in the life promised, or any right to lay hold of it as your's by faith. And you must practice holiness without the forementioned means, or else you can never attain to them. Thus the true means are turned out of their office; and instead of being causes, they are made to be effects and fruits of a holy practice. And it will be in vain ever to expect such effects and fruits; for holiness itself, with all its effects, must needs be destroyed, when its necessary causes are taken away. Therefore the apostle Paul testifieth, that the way of salvation by the works of

the law maketh faith void, and the promises of none effect; and frustrateth the grace of God, as if Christ died in vain; and maketh Christ to be of no profit, and of none effect to us, as those that are-fallen from graceⁿ. Let us now examine the modern doctrine of salvation by the condition of sincere obedience to all the commands of Christ, and we shall quickly find it to be a chip of the same block with the former legal way of salvation, in the same manner destructive to the means of holiness, and to holiness itself. It requireth of us the performance of sincere obedience, before we have the means necessary to produce it, by making it antecedent to our justification, and persuasion of eternal happiness, and our actual enjoyment of union and fellowship with Christ, and of that new nature which is to be had only in him by faith. It destroyeth the nature of that saving faith whereby we actually receive and enjoy Christ and all his benefits, and knocketh off our hands from laying hold of Christ and his salvation, by telling us still, as Christ told the legal worker after all his labour, that yet we lack something^o; that it is presumption to take him as our own, until we have performed the condition for our right and title to him; which is another kind of saving faith, otherwise called *sincere obedience*. By this devised conditional faith, satan keepeth many poor souls at a bay, poring upon their own hearts for many years together, to find whether they have performed the condition, and whether they have, as yet, any right to Christ for their salvation, not daring to venture to take him as their own. It is a strong partition

ⁿ Rom. iv. 14. Gal. ii. 21. & v. 2, 4.
x. 21.

^o Mark

tion-wall, that will certainly hinder the soul from coming to Christ, until it be thrown down by the knowledge of salvation by grace, without any procuring condition of works. And though it be accounted but as the payment of a pepper-corn for a great estate; yet it is enough to break the ablest man in the world, because it debarreth him from laying hold of the effectual means of holiness, whereby that pepper-corn may be obtained.

2dly, Those that seek salvation by the works of the law, do therein act according to their natural state. They live and walk according to the flesh, or old man; not according to the new state, by Christ living in them, I doubt not but several of them that live under the light of the gospel, are partakers of a new state in Christ, and do walk holily in it; but the best in this world have in them flesh as well as spirit, and may act according to either state in some measure; and in this matter they do act only according to their carnal natural state. When the believing Galatians were seduced to a legal way of salvation, the apostle Paul chargeth it upon them as their folly, that, having begun in the Spirit, they would now be *made perfect in the flesh*^p. And he resembleth those that desire to be under the law, to Abraham's son born of Hagar the bond-woman, to shew, that such do walk as those that *are born after the flesh, not after the Spirit*^q. The law was first given to Adam in his pure natural state, to prescribe terms for his continuance in the happiness which he then enjoyed. And ever since that time, the flesh, or natural man, is married to the law, and the *law hath dominion over a man*

^p Gal. iii. 3.^q Gal. iv. 21, 23, 29.

ay long as he liveth, i. e. until he be dead to his fleshly state by the body of Christ, and married to him that is raised from the dead[†]. We are not at all under the law as a covenant of works, according to our new state in Christ; as the apostle testifieth[‡]. "Ye are not under the law, but under grace:" and "If ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not under the law." From hence we may firmly conclude, that none can possibly attain to true godliness by acting according to legal terms; because I have fully proved already, that it is impossible to be godly while we are in the flesh, or in a natural state, and that, as far as we act according to it, we can do nothing but sin. The law is weak through the flesh, that it cannot bring us to fulfil its own righteousness[‡]. It is married to a cross piece of flesh, that is enmity to it, and can never be subject to it[¶]. It sueth the natural man for an old debt of obedience, that he is utterly unable to pay since the fall: and the success is accordingly; it gets nothing. Neither do those take a better course, that would bring themselves to holiness, by making sincere obedience to Christ's commands the condition of their salvation. Their way is the same for substance with that of the Galatians before mentioned, who would be made perfect in the flesh, not by perfect obedience, but sincere; as hath been shewed before. Their endeavours to procure an interest in Christ by their sincere obedience, do testify against themselves, that they do not act as people that are in Christ, but rather as people that judge themselves to be without an interest in Christ, and to be yet to seek for

[†] Rom. vii. 1, 4.

[‡] Rom. viii. 3, 4.

[‡] Rom. vi. 14.

[¶] Rom. viii. 7.

[†] Gal. v. 18.

for it. And sincere obedience is as impossible to be attained unto, as perfect obedience, if we act according to our dead natural state.

3dly, As the law bereaveth of all strengthening means, that are to be had by faith in Christ, and findeth us without strength in our natural state; so, of itself, it affordeth us no strength to fulfil its own commands: "If there had been a law given that could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law^a." It doth not so much as promise us life, until we have performed the obedience required by it: "The man that doth those things, shall live by them^b." It is well called a voice of words^c: because its high and big words are not accompanied with any enlivening power. And the doctrine of life and salvation by sincere obedience is not better-natured, or more bountiful to us; for it exacteth of us the performance of the condition before it alloweth us any life or salvation by Christ. Can any man rationally expect strength to obey sincerely, by following a doctrine that doth not so much as promise it? The true gospel is of a more benign nature; for it promiseth, that "God will pour out of his Spirit upon all flesh^a;" and "will put his laws in our hearts^b;" and "will cause us to walk in his statutes, that we shall keep his judgments, and do them^c." This word of God's grace, that requireth not holiness of us as a condition, but promiseth it to us as a free gift, must needs be the only doctrine "that is able to build us up, and to give us

I 4

"an

^a Gal. iii. 21. ^b Rom. x. 5. ^c Heb. xii. 19.
^a Acts ii. 17. ^b Heb. viii. 10. ^c Ezek. xxxvi. 27.

“ an inheritance among all them that are sanctified ^d.” Seeing it pleaseth God to bring us to holiness by believing a doctrine, we may reasonably expect that God should work upon us suitably to the nature of the doctrine which we believe ; that he should give by a giving doctrine, and exact by an exacting doctrine.

4thly, The way of procuring life and happiness by the condition of perfect or sincere works, is not a rational method for the recovery of fallen man : though it were good for the preserving of life before the fall : for it prescribeth the immediate practice of holiness to recover a man dead in sin ; as if one would say to the sick of the palsy, “ Arise and walk, and then “ thou shalt be whole, and able to walk.” We sometimes say jestingly to a child that is fallen on the ground, “ Come hither, and I will help thee up :” but if we should say so to one that is cast on his bed by a dead palsy, we should be guilty of mocking and cruel insulting the afflicted. Those that are humbled and made sensible of their original sin, and natural deadness, know that they must first live by the Spirit, before they can act holily ^e. They will enquire : “ How shall we have strength to perform the duty “ required ?” If you answer, that they must trust in God and Christ, to help them ; they may readily reply, they have no sure ground to trust on God or Christ for any saving grace, according to this doctrine, before they have performed this condition, at least in a sincere resolution of obedience, and that they are as unable to bring their hearts to such a resolution, as a dead man is to raise himself out of the grave. Take another instance. The method of the doctrine

^d Acts xx. 32.^e Gal. v. 23.

of works is, You must love God first, and then, on that condition, he will love you again ; whereas, on the contrary, *we love God, because he loved us first*¹. And if God suspend his love to us upon any condition, our love to him will not be absolute, but suspended upon the same condition, and no way contrary to an actual hating of him.

5thly, The law is so far from healing our sinful corruption, that it proveth rather an occasion of sinful motions and actings in those that seek salvation by the works of it. This cometh to pass by reason of the power of our natural corruption ; which is stirred up and rageth the more, when the holy and just law of God is set in opposition against it ; so that the fault is not in the law, but in our own hearts. Those that find not this by their own experience, should believe the apostle Paul, who teacheth it plainly, and that from his own experience². He affirmeth, that there are motions of sin by the law, in a fleshly state ; and that sin, taking occasion by the commandment, *Thou shalt not covet*, wrought in him all manner of concupiscence, deceived him, slew him, became exceeding sinful ; and that without the law, he was alive, and sin dead ; but, when the commandment came, sin revived, and he died. He sheweth the cause of this irreconcilable enmity and contrariety between his sinful nature, and the law : “ The law is spiritual, but I am carnal, sold under sin.” Take notice here, from the reason given by the apostle, that the doctrine of salvation by sincere obedience will have the same event. Corrupt nature is contrary to sincere obedience, as well as perfect ; and, if we make it

¹ 1 John iv. 19.

² Rom. vii. 5, 14.

it the condition of our salvation, sin will take the same occasion by it, to become exceeding sinful in its motions and actions. The success of legal doctrine upon the natural man is according to the proverb, "Reprove not a scorner, lest he hate thee"^a. Rebuking a madman, is the way to enrage him; and such is the natural man in spiritual things, since he fell out of his right mind by the sin of Adam. We find by manifold experience, that though men be generally addicted to the principle of salvation by works; yet multitudes of them hate all strict preachers and professors of true holiness, because they are a torment to their consciences. They endeavour to shelter themselves in ignorance of the law; accounting, that the less they know, the less they shall answer for; and therefore they would not have right things prophesied unto them^b. And they have prevailed generally in the world, to darken the natural knowledge of moral duties, in such a degree, that there is a necessity of learning them by divine revelation out of the scriptures. We may find how prone legal writers are to corrupt the sense of the law, that they may leave starting holes for their corruptions, by the corrupt glosses of the scribes and pharisees, from which Christ did vindicate it^c. And, as far as I have observed, none more endeavour to discover the purity and perfection of the law, than those that seek holiness and salvation, without any legal condition, by the mere free grace of God in Christ. The doctrine of salvation by sincere obedience, is but a mincing the perfection required in the law: and yet how is this doctrine minced again and again, until it is become

(s)

^a Prov. ix. 8.^b Isa. xxx. 10.^c Matt. v.

so small, that the substance of all true obedience is lost? A willingness to be saved according to Christ's terms, or a consent that Christ should be our Lord, or a resolution to obey his commandments (which is a little more than ignorant men trust on, when they say, they hope God will save them because they have a good meaning, though they live in the neglect of all religion) without any farther practice of holiness, shall pass with many for enough of sincere obedience, both to enter them into a state of salvation, and to continue them in it; so that they shall never be accounted breakers of the gospel covenant, while so much can be pretended. The most that is made necessary for salvation, shall be only, to endeavour to do what we can to obey Christ's commands: though all that the most can do, is nothing that is truly good. Those that have a little more zeal for their salvation by works, are prone to spend it in superstitious observances, because they suit better with their carnal nature than the spiritual commands of God and Christ. I doubt not but this hath been one occasion of the prevailing of heathenish, Jewish, and popish superstitions in the world. We find, by experience, how popery fell in several nations in late years, when the great pillar of it, the doctrine of justification by works, was overthrown by the protestant doctrine of justification by faith alone. If these legal zealots be forced, by strong conviction, to endeavour the practice of spiritual duties for the quieting of their guilty consciences, they may be brought to strive and labour earnestly, and even to macerate their bodies with fasting, that they may kill their lusts; but still their lusts are alive, and as strong as ever they were; and do
shew

shew forth their enmity against the law of God, by inward fretting, repining, and grudging at it, as a grievous task-master, though a slavish fear restrain their gross outward actings. And, if once these zealots be enlightened with the knowledge of the spiritual nature of the law, to discern that God rejecteth all their slavish service, and will not own it for sincere obedience; then they fall into despair of their salvation, because they see they have failed in their highest attempts to perform the condition; and then they can easily discover themselves, that their hearts swell in anger and manifest hatred against the law, yea and against God and Christ, for prescribing such hard conditions of salvation, which they cannot keep, and yet must expect to be damned eternally for breaking them. This filleth them with blasphemous thoughts against God and Christ, and they can hardly refrain from blaspheming with their tongues. And, when they are brought to this horrible condition, if God doth not in mercy discover to them the way of salvation by free grace through faith alone, they will endeavour, if they can, to sear their consciences past feeling of sin, and fully to abandon all religion, which hath proved such an unsufferable torment to them: or, if they cannot sear their consciences, some of them are easily prevailed with by satan, rather to murder themselves, than to live longer in the hatred of God, the spirit of blasphemy, and continual horror of conscience. This is the pestilent effect of legal doctrine upon a carnal heart, that doth but rouze up and terribly enrage the sleeping lion, our sinful corruption, instead of killing it: as is too evident by the sad experience of many that have endeavoured with all their might

to practise it; and by the scripture, that sheweth a sufficient cause why it cannot be otherwise. Therefore the doctrine of salvation by sincere obedience, that was invented against Antinomianism, may well be ranked among the worst Antinomian errors. For my part, I hate it with perfect hatred, and account it mine enemy, as I have found it to be. And I have found, by some good experience, the truth of the lesson taught by the apostle, that the way to be freed from the mastery and dominion of sin, is, *not to be under the law, but under grace*¹.

6thly, The way of salvation by works was blasted by the curse denounced against the first Adam's sin; so that now it cannot work life in us, or holiness, but only death: for the law, which requireth both sincere and perfect obedience to God in all things, was made known to Adam at his first creation, as the means of continuing the happy life that was then bestowed upon him; and it would have been effectual for this end, if he had not transgressed in the forbidden fruit. But, when he had once brought himself and his posterity under the terrible sentence, *Thou shalt surely die*^m, all that knowledge of God, or his law, that before wrought for continuance of life, was turned by that cursing sentence the contrary way, to work for his death, even for the death of his soul in sin, as well as for the death of his body; and therefore it quickly moved him to hide himself from God as an enemy. It was as if God should say, "All the light and knowledge that thou hast, shall not be able to continue thy life, or restore it; but it shall rather tend to thy death." Therefore, while we continue
in

¹ Rom. vi. 14.^m Gen. ii. 17.

in our natural state, under the first Adam's guilt and curse, the knowledge of the law, yea and all such knowledge of God and his attributes as natural men may attain to, must needs be in like manner accursed to us. And, seeing man did not use his natural knowledge and wisdom aright, God is resolved to revenge the abuse of it, by giving us salvation in a way contrary to it, that seemeth foolishness to the natural man; and wholly to abolish the way of living by any of our works, or by any wisdom or knowledge that the natural man can attain unto. "For it is written, "I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring "to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Hath "not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? "For, after that, in the wisdom of God, the world "by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God, by the "foolishness of preaching, to save them that be- "lieve^a." Hence we may conclude, that no truth known by the light of nature, can be an effectual principle or motive to work holiness in us; and gospel principles and motives are but abused, when they are applied to a legal way of salvation.

7thly, The end which God aimed at in giving the law to Moses, was not, that any should ever attain to holiness or salvation by the condition of perfect or sincere obedience to it; though, if there had been any such way of salvation at that time, it must have consisted in the performance of that law, which was then given to the church to be a rule of life, as well as a covenant. There was another covenant made before that time with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, a covenant of grace, promising all blessings freely through Christ,

^a 1 Cor. i. 19, 20, 21;

Christ, the promised seed, by which only they were to be saved. And the covenant of the law was added, that they might see their sinfulness and subjection to death and wrath, and the impossibility of attaining to life or holiness by their works, and be forced to trust on the free promise only for all their salvation, and that sin might be restrained by the spirit of bondage, until the coming of that promised seed Jesus Christ, and the more plentiful pouring out of the sanctifying Spirit by him. This the apostle Paul sheweth largely^o. None of the Israelites under the old testament were ever saved by the Sinai covenant; neither did any of them ever attain to holiness by the terms of it. Some of them did indeed perform the commandments of it sincerely, though imperfectly; but those were first justified, and made partakers of life and holiness by virtue of that better covenant made with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, which was the same in substance with the new covenant or testament established by the blood of Christ. Had it not been for that better covenant, the Sinai covenant would have proved to them an occasion of no happiness, but only of sin, despair, and destruction. Of itself it was only *a killing letter*, the ministration of death and condemnation; and therefore it is now abolished^p. We have cause to praise God, for delivering his church by the blood of Christ from this yoke of bondage: and we have cause to abhor the device of those that would lay upon us a more grievous and terrible yoke, by turning our very new covenant into a covenant of sincerity

^o Gal. iii. 15—24. Rom. v. 20, 21. and x. 3, 4.
^p 2 Cor. iii. 6, 8, 9, 11.

cere works, and leaving us no such better covenant, as the Israelites had under their yoke, to relieve us in our extremity.

D I R E C T I O N VII.

We are not to imagine that our hearts and lives must be changed from sin to holiness in any measure, before we may safely venture to trust on Christ for the sure enjoyment of himself, and his salvation.

E X P L I C A T I O N.

WE are naturally so prone to ground our salvation upon our own works, that, if we cannot make them procuring conditions and causes of our salvation by Christ, yet we shall endeavour at least to make them necessary preparatives to fit us for receiving Christ and his salvation by faith. And men are easily persuaded, that this is not at all contrary to salvation by free grace, because all that is hereby ascribed to our works, or good qualifications, is only, “that
 “they put us in a fit posture to receive a free gift.
 “If we were to go to a prince for a free gift, good
 “manners and due reverence would teach us to
 “trim ourselves first, and to change our slovenly
 “cloaths, as Joseph did when he came out of the
 “dungeon into the presence of Pharaoh. It seemeth
 “to be an impudent slighting and contemning the
 “justice and holiness of God and Christ, and an unsufferable affront and indignity offered to the Divine Majesty, when any dare presume to approach
 “his presence in the nasty pickle of his sins, covered
 “all over with putrefying sores, not at all closed,
 “bound up, or cleansed; much more when they

“en”

“ endeavour to receive the most holy One into such
“ an abominable stinking kennel, as a sinner’s heart
“ is before it be at all reformed. The parable
“ concerning the man that was to be bound hand
“ and foot, and cast into outer darkness, for com-
“ ing to the royal wedding without a wedding gar-
“ ment, seemeth to be intended as a warning a-
“ gainst all such presumption.” Many that be-
hold with terror the abominable filth of their own
hearts, are kept off from coming immediately to
Christ, by such imaginations, which satan strongly
maintaineth and increaseth in them by his sugges-
tions: so that they can by no means be persuaded
out of them, until God teacheth them inwardly by
the powerful illumination of his Spirit. They delay
the saving act of faith, because they think they are
not yet duly prepared and qualified for it. On the
same account, many weak believers delay coming
to the Lord’s supper for many years together, even
as long as they live in this world; and would be as
likely to delay their baptism, if they had not been
baptized in infancy. Against all such imaginations,
I shall propose the following considerations.

First, This error is pernicious to the practice of
holiness, and to our whole salvation, in the same
manner with that treated of in the foregoing di-
rection, and may be confuted by the same argu-
ments which are there produced. Whether holi-
ness be made a procuring condition of our salvation
thro’ Christ, or only a condition necessary to qualify
us for the reception of Christ, we are equally brought
under those legal terms of doing first the duties required

K

in

in the law, that so we may live. Therefore we are equally bereaved of the assistance of those means of holiness mentioned in the foregoing directions, as union and fellowship with Christ, and the enjoyment of all his sanctifying endowments by faith, which should go before the practice of holiness, that they may enable us for it; and we are equally left to labour in vain for holiness, while we are in our cursed natural state, whereby our natural corruption will be rather exasperated than mortified; so that we shall never be duly prepared for the reception of Christ as long as we live in the world. Thus, while we endeavour to prepare our way to Christ by holy qualifications, we do rather fill it with stumbling blocks and deep pits, whereby our souls are hindered from ever attaining to the salvation of Christ.

Secondly, Any the least change of our hearts and lives from sin to holiness before our receiving of Christ and his salvation by faith, is not at all necessary according to the terms of the gospel, nor required in the word of God. Christ would have the vilest sinners come to him for salvation immediately, without delaying the time to prepare themselves for him. When the wicked jailor enquired, *What he must do to be saved?* Paul directed him forthwith to believe on Christ, with a promise, that in so doing he should be saved; and straightway he and all his were baptized*. Paul doth not tell him, that he must reform his heart and life first, tho' he was in a very nasty pickle at that time, having but a little before fastened Paul and Silas in the stocks, and newly attempted a horrid wilful self-murder. Those three

thousand

* Acts xvi. 30, 33.

thousand Jews that were converted by Peter's preaching, and added the same day to the church by baptism^a, seemed to have as much need of some considerable time to prepare themselves for receiving Christ as others, because they had but lately polluted themselves with the murder of Christ himself^c. Christ commands his servants to go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and to bring in to his feast, the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind; yea to go out into the high ways and to compel them to come in, without allowing them to tarry until they had cleansed their sores, and shifted off their filthy rags and swarms of lice. Christ would have us to believe on him that justifieth the ungodly; and therefore he doth not require us to be godly before we believe^d. He came as a physician for the sick, and doth not expect that they should recover their health in the least degree before they come to him^e. The vilest sinners are fitly prepared and qualified for this design; which is to shew forth the exceeding riches of grace, pardoning our sins, and saving us freely^f. For this end the law of Moses entered, that the *offence might abound*; that so where *sin abounded*, *grace might much more abound*^g. He loved us in our most loathsome sinful pollution, so as to die for us; and much more will he love us in it, so as to receive us when we come to him for the purchased salvation. He hath given full satisfaction to the justice of God for sinners that they might have all

K 2

righte-

^a Acts ii. 41. ^c ver. 23. ^d Rom. iv. 5. ^e Matth. ix. 12. ^f Eph. ii. 5, 7. ^g Rom. v. 20.

righteousness, and holiness, and all salvation, only by fellowship with him through faith. Therefore it is no affront to Christ, or slighting or contemning the justice and holiness of God, to come to Christ, while we are polluted sinners; but rather it is an affronting and contemning the saving grace, merit, and fulness of Christ, if we endeavour to make ourselves righteous and holy before we receive Christ himself, and all righteousness and holiness in him by faith. Christ loathed not to touch a leper, and condescended to wash the feet of his disciples, and did not expect that they should be washed and perfumed before-hand, as some great ones of the world are said to do, when they wash the feet of poor men, in imitation of Christ.

Thirdly, Those that receive Christ with an unfeigned faith, shall never want a wedding-garment to adorn them in the sight of God. Faith itself is very precious in the sight of God, and most holy^a. God loveth it, because it giveth the glory of our salvation only to the free grace of God in Christ^a, and renounceth all dependence upon any conditions that we can perform to procure a right to Christ, or to make ourselves acceptable to him. It containeth in it a hearty love to Christ as a Saviour, and a hungering and thirsting appetite for his salvation; and it is the mouth whereby the soul feedeth hungrily upon him. What wedding-garment can sinners bring with them more delightful than this to their bountiful God, whose great design is to manifest the abundant riches of his glorious grace and bounty

^z 2 Pet. i. 1. Jude ver. 20.

^a Rom. iv. 16.

bounty in this wedding feast? The Father himself loveth them, because they love Christ, and believe that he came out from God^b. But yet we see that the excellency of faith lieth in this, that it accounteth not itself, nor any other works of ours, a sufficient ornament to make us acceptable in the sight of God. It will not be our wedding garment itself, but it buyeth of Christ *white raiment that we might be clothed*, and that *the shame of our nakedness may not appear*^c. Tho' it loveth and desireth the free gift of holiness; yet it abandons all thoughts of practising holiness immediately, before we come to Christ for a holy nature. It putteth on Christ himself, and in him all things that pertain to life and godliness. Thus every true believer is *clothed with the sun*^d, even with the *sun of righteousness*, the Lord Jesus; who is pleased to be himself both our wedding-garment and feast, and all our spiritual and eternal happiness.

For the more full satisfaction and consolation of those distressed souls that lie under the terrible apprehensions of their own sinfulness and the wrath of God, and dare not venture to trust stedfastly on Christ for their salvation, until they can find in themselves some change from sin to holiness; I shall mention particularly several of those things that such would find in themselves: and I shall shew, that, if some of them be not partly comprehended in faith itself, they are fruits and consequences of faith; and therefore they cannot be rationally

K 3

^b John xvi. 27.^c Rev. iii. 18.^d Rev. xii. 1.

tionally expected before we trust on Christ for our salvation.

1st, They think it necessary to *repent* before they believe on Christ for their salvation, because repentance is absolutely necessary to salvation *. “ Ex-
 “ cept ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish;” and Christ placeth the duty of repentance before faith †.
 “ Repent, and believe the gospel.” But we are to know, that Christ requireth repentance first as the end, to be aimed at, and faith in the next place, as the only means of attaining to it : and tho’ the end be the first in intention, yet the means are first in practice and execution, tho’ both be absolutely necessary to salvation. For what is repentance, but a hearty turning from sin to God and his service? and what way is there to turn to God, but thro’ Christ “ who is the way, the truth, and the life; “ without whom none cometh to the Father ‡ ?” and what way is there of coming to Christ but by faith? Therefore, if we would turn to God in the right way, we must first come to Christ by faith; and faith must go before repentance,, as the great instrument afforded us by the grace of God for the effectual performance of it. Repentance is indeed a duty which sinners owe naturally to God; but the great question is, How shall sinners be able to perform it? This question is resolved only by the gospel of Christ, repent and believe. The way to repent is, to begin with believing. Therefore the great doctrine of John, in his baptism of repentance, was, That they should believe on him that

* Luke xiii. 3. † Mark. i. 15. ‡ John xiv. 6.

that should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus ^h.

2dly, *Regeneration* also is necessary to salvation^t, and therefore many would find it wrought in themselves before they trust on Christ for their salvation. But consider what regeneration is. It is a new begetting or creating us in Christ^k, in whom we are partakers of a divine nature, far different from that which we received from the first Adam. Now, faith is the uniting grace whereby Christ dwelleth in us, and we in him, as hath been shewed; and therefore it is the first grace wrought in our regeneration, and the means of all the rest: when you truly believe, you are regenerated, and not till then. Those that receive Christ by believing, and those only, are the sons of God, “which are born, not of blood, “nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, “but of God^l.”

3dly, They account it necessary to receive Christ as Lord and Lawgiver, by a sincere resignation of themselves to his government, and a resolution to obey his law, *before* they receive him as their Saviour. This is one principal lesson of the new divinity, and such a receiving Christ as Lord, is made to be the great act of saving faith; without which such faith as I have described, whereby we trust on Christ for salvation, is reckoned no better than gross presumption. They teach, that Christ will not bestow his salvation to those that do not first yield their subjection to his kingly authority; but he calleth them his enemies, because they would not that he should

K 4

reign

^h Acts xix. 4. ⁱ John iii. 3. ^k 1 Cor. iv. 15.
Eph. ii. 10. ^l John i. 12, 13.

reign over them, and requireth that they be brought and slain before him ^m. And I own it as a certain truth, that Christ will save none but those that are brought to resign themselves sincerely to the obedience of his royal authority and laws. But yet we must observe, that they are not brought to this holy resignation, or to any sincere purpose and resolution of obedience, before they receive his salvation, but rather by receiving it. Men that were never thoroughly sensible of their natural death in sin, do easily bring themselves to resolve upon universal obedience to God; when they are on their death-beds, or in any imminent danger, or when they would prepare themselves for the Lord's supper, that so they may make their peace with God, and trust securely on Christ for his salvation. But all resolutions of that kind are vain and hypocritical, sooner broken than made. Those that know the plague of their own hearts, do find that their mind is enmity unto the law of God and Christ, and cannot be subject unto it ⁿ, and that they can as soon remove a mountain, as give up themselves sincerely to obedience, before they trust on Christ for his salvation, and for the gift of a new heart, whereby they may be enabled both to will and to do any thing that is acceptable to God. We should have been sufficiently obliged to all obedient purposes, resolutions, and resignations, if Christ had never come into the world to save us; but he knew that we could perform nothing holily except he made us first partakers of salvation, and that we shall never obey him as Lawgiver, until we receive

^m Luke xix. 27.ⁿ Rom. viii. 7.

receive him as Saviour. He is a saving Lord; trust on him first to save you from the guilt and power of sin, and dominion of satan, and to give you a new spiritual disposition; then, and not till then, the love of Christ will constrain you to resign yourself heartily to live to him that died for you^o, and you will be able to say with an unfeigned resolution, "O Lord, truly I am thy servant, I am thy servant, and the son of thy handmaid: thou hast loosed my bands ^p.

4thly, It seemeth to them evident, that some good works are necessary, before we can trust on Christ safely for the forgiveness of sins; because our Saviour teaches us, that, if we forgive not men their trespasses, neither will our heavenly Father forgive our trespasses; and directeth us to pray, "Forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors ^q." Restitution also was to be made of things wrongfully gotten from others, before the sacramental atonement was made by the trespass offering^r; I answer, This is sufficient to prove, that forgiving others, and restitution according to our ability, or at least a sincere desire and purpose so to do, are very closely joined with the forgiveness of our sins, and are very necessary to fit us for prayer, and for sacramental applications of pardoning grace to ourselves. A lively faith cannot be without these fruits, and therefore we cannot pray, or partake of sacraments, in faith, without them; but yet if we strive to do either of these before we trust on Christ for our pardon and salvation, we shall do them slavishly

^o 2 Cor. v. 14. ^p Psal. cxvi. 16. ^q Matt. vi. 12, 15. ^r Lev. vi. 5, 7.

vishly and hypocritically, not in any holy acceptable manner. Our forgiving others will not be accompanied with any hearty love to them as to ourselves for the sake of God; and our restitution will be but a forced act, like Pharaoh's letting the children of Israel go; or like Judas restoring the thirty pieces of silver, being compelled thereunto by terror of spirit; and, when the terror that forced us is removed, we shall be as ready to recal our forgiveness and to wrong others again, as Pharaoh was to bring the Israelites again into bondage after he had let them go*. If you would forgive others heartily, so as to love them again, you must first, by faith in Christ, apprehend the love and mercy of God towards yourselves; and then you will be able, according to the apostle's instructions, to be kind, tender hearted, forgiving one another, *even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you*†. The readiness of Zaccheus to make restitution, followed upon a discovery of Christ's love to him; and his joyful receiving Christ into his house, was fruit whereby he did evidence the truth of that faith that was already wrought in his heart.

5thly, I shall reckon up together *several other qualifications* that distressed souls would find in themselves, that they may be duly prepared to trust on Christ for their salvation: and, when they have laboured anxiously a long time, and cannot get them, at last they lie down in sorrowful despondence, not daring to apply the consolations of the grace of God in Christ to their wounded consciences. Let perplexed souls mark the particulars, and observe whether

* Exod. xiv. 5.

† Eph. iv. 32.

ther the condition of their own souls be reached in any of them. "O thou afflicted, tossed with tempests, and not comforted," what good qualifications are they that thou wouldst have, that thou mayst be encouraged to lay hold on Christ for salvation! It is likely thou wilt answer, in the bitterness of thy soul, "O let me have first some love to God and godliness in mine heart, and freedom from mine hateful heart-risings against him and his service! Let me have some good thoughts of God, his justice, mercy, holiness, that I may be able to justify him tho' he damn me, and that I may not be filled with murmuring and hellish blasphemies in my mind against him. Let the raging of my lusts be abated, and the stinking kennel of my wicked heart a little cleansed. Let me have some holy reverential fear of God, and not only a pannic tormenting horror. I would be more affected with the wrath of God, and not be of a slighting heedless spirit. I would be more humbled for sin, lothe it, and be ashamed of it, and be sorry for it with a godly sorrow, not merely because of the punishment, but because it grieveth and vexeth the holy Spirit of God. I would be able to make a willing and ingenuous confession of sin, and to pour out my soul to the Lord in lively affectionate prayer for forgiveness, and to praise and glorify him heartily: and not be like a lifeless stone in the duty of prayer, as I am." Are these the things thou desirest, O poor distressed soul? The best reply I can make for thy speedy comfort, is, to inform thee, that the things are good, but thy desires are not well-timed. It is unreasonable for thee

to expect these holy qualifications, whilst thou art in thy natural state, under the guilt of sin, and the apprehension of the wrath of God, before thou hast received the atonement, and the new spiritual life that is by Christ thro' faith in his name. Thou dost but exasperate thy corruptions, and harden thy heart, and make thy wounds to stink the more because of thy foolishness. Such good qualifications are included in the nature of faith, and for the most part they follow after it; so that they cannot possibly be obtained before thou trustest in Christ for thy salvation; as I shall shew concerning them particularly in their order. A love to the salvation of God, and to the free gift of holiness, is included in the nature of faith; so that it cannot be hearty without it. Act faith first, and the apprehension of God's love to thy soul will sweetly allure and constrain thee to love God and his service universally: "We love him because he loved us first." We cannot be before-hand with God in love: and we must perceive his love, to make us love him: for, if we look upon him as a God contrary to us, that hateth us, and will damn us, our own innate self-love will breed hatred and heart-risings against him, in spite of our hearts. That *love* which is the end of the law, must flow from *faith unfeigned*". And, if hatred work in thee more than love, how canst thou expect good thoughts of God, or any other than blaspheming, or at least murmuring thoughts of him, in this condition? Ill-will never speaketh or thinketh well. The first right holy thoughts
thou

" 1 John iv. 19.

" 1 Tim. i. 5.

thou canst have of God, are thoughts of his grace and mercy to thy soul in Christ, which are included in the grace of faith. Get these thoughts first by believing in Christ, and they will breed in thee love to God, and all good thoughts of him, and free thee from blasphemous and murmuring thoughts by degrees; for *love thinks no evil* ^x. Then wilt thou be able to account God just and merciful, if he had damned thee, and extended his grace to others; and thou wilt be able to think well of his holiness, and of his decrees, which many cannot endure to hear of. The way to get rid of thy raging lusts, is by faith, that *purifieth the heart, and worketh by love* ^y. The soul must be brought to take pleasure in God and Christ by faith, or else it will lust after fleshly and worldly pleasures. And the more you strive against lusts without faith, the more they are stirred up; tho' you prevail so far as to restrain the fulfilling of them. Beg a holy fear of God, with fear of coming short of the promised rest thro' unbelief ^z. Such a fear is an ingredient of faith, and it will breed in us a reverential, yea a child-like fear of God and his goodness ^a. "We must have grace, "whereby we may serve God, with reverence," &c. It is in the margin, *We must have or hold fast grace*. And there is no other way to hold fast grace but by faith; and this will quickly calm all panic and tormenting horror. And, if you would be freed from carelessness, and slighting the wrath of God, your way is, first, by believing, to avoid despairing: for people grow careless by despairing; and, for their
own

^x 1 Cor. xiii. 5. ^y Acts xv. 9. Gal. v. 6. ^z Heb. iv. 1. ^a Heb. xii. 28. Hos. iii. 5.

own quiet, they will endeavour to flight evils which they have no hope to prevent; according to the proverb, "Let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die^b." True humiliation for sin is either a part or fruit of faith; for, on our believing, "we shall remember our own evil ways, and doings that were not good, and shall lothe ourselves in our own sight for all abominations^c." We shall also then willingly renounce our own righteousness, and *account it but dung, that we may win Christ by faith^d*. But beggars will make the most of all their nasty rags, till they be furnished with better cloaths; and cripples will not cast away their crutches, until they have a better support to lean on. Godly sorrow for sin is wrought in us by believing the pardoning grace of God; as it is found by experience, that a pardon from a prince will sometimes sooner draw tears from a stubborn malefactor, than the fear of a halter will. Thus the sinful woman was brought to wash Christ's feet with her tears^e. We are not like to be sorry for grieving God with our sins, while we look upon him as an enemy that will ease himself well enough of his burden, and right himself upon us by our everlasting destruction. The belief of God's pardoning and accepting grace, is a necessary means to bring us to an ingenuous confession of sins. The people freely confessed their sins, when they were baptized of John in Jordan, *for the remission of sins^f*. The confession of despairers is forced, like the extorted confession and cryings out of malefactors upon the rack. A pardon sooner openeth the mouth to an ingenuous confession, than *Confess*
and

^b 1 Cor. xv. 32. ^c Ezek. xxxvi. 31. ^d Phil. iii. 7, 8.
^e Luke vii. 37, 38. ^f Mark i. 4, 5.

Direct. VIII. *Of Sanctification.* 143

and be banged, or Confess and be damned. Therefore, if you would freely confess your sins, believe first, that "God is faithful and just to forgive your sins," through Christ^z. And, if you would pray to God, or praise him, with lively affections, you must first believe that God will hear you, and give you what is best for you for Christ's sake^h; otherwise your praying will be only from the teeth outward; for how shall you call on him *in whom you have not believed*ⁱ? You must come first to Christ the altar by faith, that by him, you may offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually^k.

Finally, To pass from particulars to the general assertion laid down in the direction; if you ask, *What shall we do that we may work the works of God*, or get any saving qualifications? I must direct you first to faith, as the work of works, and the great saving preparatory to all good qualifications, by answering in our Saviour's words, "This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent^l."

DIRECTION VIII.

Be sure to seek for holiness of heart and life only in its due order, where God hath placed it, after union with Christ, justification, and the gift of the Holy Ghost; and, in that order, seek it earnestly by faith, as a very necessary part of your salvation.

EXPLICATION.

I Hope the Reader will observe warily in all these directions, that the *holiness* aimed at as the great end in the whole discourse, consisteth not in the grace

^z 1 John i. 9. ^h John xvi. 23, 24. ⁱ Rom. x. 14.
^k Heb. xiii. 10, 15. ^l John vi. 28, 29.

grace or act of *faith* required peculiarly by the gospel; which tho' it be a saving gift of Christ, yet is here considered rather as a *means* precedent to the reception of Christ, and all his salvation, than a part of his salvation received. But the holiness aimed at consisteth in conformity to the whole moral law, to which we are naturally obliged, if there had never been any gospel, or any such duty as believing in Christ for salvation.

Now, in this direction, three things are contained that are very necessary to guide us to the attainment of this great end, and therefore worthy of our serious consideration.

First, It is a matter of high concern, to be acquainted with the *due place* and *order* wherein God hath settled this holy practice in the mystery of our salvation, and a great point of christian wisdom to seek it only in that *order*. We know that God is the God of order, and that his infinite wisdom hath appeared in appointing the order of his creatures, which we are forced to observe for attainment of our ends in worldly things; so also in spiritual things: "God hath made an everlasting covenant, ordered "in all things, and sure^m." The benefits of it have an orderly dependence each upon other, as links of the same golden chain, tho' several of them, and a title to them all, are given to us at one and the same time. And I think enough hath been said already, to shew in what order God brings us to the

the practice of the moral law. He maketh us first to be in Christ by faith, as branches in the vine, that we may bring forth much fruit ^a. He first purgeth our consciences from dead works by justification, that we may serve the living God ^o. He maketh us first to live in the Spirit, and then to walk in the Spirit ^p. This is the order prescribed in the gospel, which is the power of God unto salvation; tho' the law prescribeth a quite contrary method, that we should first perform its commands, that so we may be justified and live; and thereby it proveth a killing letter to us. Now, mark well the great advantages you have for the attainment of holiness, by seeking it in a right gospel order. You will have the advantage of the love of God manifested toward you, in forgiving your sins, receiving you into favour, and giving you the Spirit of adoption, and the hope of his glory, freely, through Christ, to persuade and constrain you, by sweet allurements, to love God again, who hath so dearly loved you, and to love others for his sake, and to give up yourselves to the obedience of all his commands out of hearty love to him; you will also enjoy the help of the Spirit of God, to incline you powerfully unto obedience, and to strengthen you for the performance of it against all your corruptions, and the temptations of satan: so that you will have both wind and tide to forward your voyage in the practice of holiness. Contrariwise, if you rush upon the immediate performance of the law, without taking Christ's righteousness and

L

his

^a John xv. 4. §.^o Heb. ix. xiv.^p Gal. v. 25.

his Spirit in the way to it, you will find both wind and tide against you: your guilty consciences, and corrupt dead natures, will certainly defeat and frustrate all your enterprizes and attempts to love God, and serve him in love, and you will but stir up sinful lust, instead of stirring up yourselves to true obedience; or, at best, you will but attain to some slavish and hypocritical performances. Oh! that people would be persuaded to consider the due place of holiness in the mystery of salvation, and to seek it only there where they have all the advantage of gospel grace to find it. Many miscarry in their zealous enterprizes for godliness; and, after they have spent much labour in vain, God maketh a breach upon them, even to their everlasting destruction, as he did upon Uzzah, to a temporal destruction; *because they sought him not after a due order* ^a.

Secondly, We are to look upon *holiness* as a very necessary part of that salvation that is received by faith in Christ. Some are so drenched in a covenant of works, that they accuse us for making good works needless to salvation, if we will not acknowledge them to be necessary, either as conditions to procure an interest in Christ, or as preparatives to fit us for the receiving him by faith. And others, when they are taught by the scriptures that we are saved by faith, through faith without works, do begin to disregard all obedience to the law, as not at all necessary to salvation, and do account themselves

^a 1 Chron. xiii. 10.

selves obliged to it only in point of gratitude: if it be wholly neglected, they doubt not but free grace will save them harmless. Yea some are given up to such strong Antinomian delusions, that they account it a part of the liberty from the bondage of the law purchased by the blood of Christ, to make no conscience of breaking the law in their conversation. One cause of these errors, that are so contrary one to the other, is, that many are prone to imagine nothing else to be meant by salvation, but to be delivered from hell, and to enjoy heavenly happiness and glory: hence they conclude, that, if good works be a means of glorification, and precedent to it, they must also be a precedent means of our whole salvation; and that, if they be not a necessary means of our whole salvation, they are not at all necessary to glorification. But though salvation be often taken in scripture, by way of eminency, for its perfection in the state of heavenly glory; yet, according to its full and proper signification, we are to understand by it, all that freedom from the evil of our natural corrupt state, and all those holy and happy enjoyments that we receive from Christ our Saviour, either in this world by faith, or in the world to come by glorification. Thus, justification, the gift of the Spirit to dwell in us, the privileges of adoption, are parts of our salvation, which we partake of in this life. Thus also, the conformity of our hearts to the law of God, and the fruits of righteousness with which we are filled by Jesus Christ in this life, are a necessary part of our salvation. God saveth us from our sin-

ful uncleanness here, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the holy Ghost, as well as from hell hereafter ¹. Christ was called *Jesus*; i. e. a *Saviour*; because he saved his people from their sins ². Therefore it is part of our salvation, to deliver us from our sins; which is begun, in this life, by justification and sanctification, and perfected by glorification, in the life to come. Can we rationally doubt, whether it be any proper part of our salvation by Christ, to be quickened, to live to God, when we were by nature dead in trespasses and sins; and to have the image of God in holiness and righteousness restored to us, which we lost by the fall; and to be freed from a vile dishonourable slavery to satan and our own lusts, and made the servants of God; and to be honoured so highly, as to walk by the Spirit, and bring forth the fruits of the Spirit? and what is all this but holiness in heart and life? conclude we then, that holiness in this life is absolutely necessary to salvation, not only as a means to the end, but by a nobler kind of necessity, as part of the end itself. Though we are not saved by good works, as procuring causes; yet we are saved to good works, as fruits and effects of saving grace; which God hath prepared that we should walk in them ³. It is indeed one part of our salvation, to be delivered from the bondage of the covenant of works; but the end of this is, not that we may have liberty to sin, (which is the worst of slavery;)

¹ Ezek. xxxvi. 29. Tit. iii. 5.
² Eph. ii. 10.

³ Matt. i. 21.

slavery;) but that we may fulfil the royal law of liberty, and that we may serve in *newness of Spirit*, and not in *the oldness of the letter* ^u. Yea holiness in this life is such a part of our salvation, as is a necessary means to make us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in heavenly light and glory: without holiness we can never see God ^w, and are as unfit for the glorious presence, as swine for the presence-chamber of an earthly prince. I confess, some may be converted, when they are so near the point of death, that they may have little time to practise holiness in this world: but the grace of the Spirit is active like fire ^x, and as soon as it is given, it will immediately produce good inward workings of love to God, and Christ, and his people; which will be sufficient to manifest the righteous judgment of God in saving them at the great day, when he shall judge every man according to his work; tho' some possibly may not have so much time to discover their inward grace in any outward good works, as the thief upon the cross ^y.

The *third* and *last* thing to be noted in this direction, is, That *holiness of heart and life* is to be sought for earnestly by *faith*, as a very necessary part of our salvation. Great multitudes of ignorant people, that live under the gospel, harden their hearts in sin, and ruin their souls for ever, by trusting on Christ for such an imaginary salvation, as consisteth not at all in holiness, but only in forgiveness of sin, and deliverance

L 3

from

^u Gal. v. 13.
^x Matt. iii. 11.

Rom. vii. 6.

^w Heb. xii. 14.

^y Luke xxiii. 42, 43.

from everlasting torments. They would be free from the punishments due to sin ; but they love their lusts so well, that they hate holiness, and would not be saved from the service of sin. The way to oppose this pernicious delusion is, not to deny, as some do, that trusting on Christ for salvation, is a saving act of faith ; but rather to shew, that none do or can trust on Christ for true salvation, except they trust on him for holiness : neither do they heartily desire true salvation, if they do not desire to be made holy and righteous in their hearts and lives. If ever God and Christ give you salvation, holiness will be one part of it ; if Christ wash you not from the filth of your sins, you have no part with him *. What a strange kind of salvation do they desire, that care not for holiness ! They would be saved, and yet be altogether dead in sin, aliens from the life of God, bereft of the image of God, deformed by the image of satan, his slaves and vassals to their own filthy lusts, utterly unmeet for the enjoyment of God in glory. Such a salvation as that, was never purchased by the blood of Christ ; and those that seek it, abuse the grace of God in Christ, and turn it into lasciviousness. They would be saved by Christ, and yet out of Christ, in a fleshly state ; whereas God doth free none from condemnation but those that are in Christ, that walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit : or else they would divide Christ, and take a part of his salvation, and leave out the rest ; but Christ is not divided †. They would have their sins forgiven, not that they may walk with God in love in time to come, but that they may practise their enmity against him, without any
fear

* John xiii. 8.

† 1 Cor. i. 13.

fear of punishment. But let them not be deceived, God is not mocked. They understand not what true salvation is, neither were they ever yet thoroughly sensible of their lost estate, and of the great evil of sin: and that which they trust on Christ for, is but an imagination of their own brains; and therefore their trusting is gross presumption. True gospel faith maketh us come to Christ with a thirsty appetite, that we may drink of living water, even of his sanctifying Spirit^a; and to cry out earnestly to save us, not only from hell, but from sin; saying, "Teach us to do thy will; thy Spirit is good^a; Turn thou me, and I shall be turned^b; Create in me a clean heart, O God, and renew a right spirit within me^c." This is the way whereby the doctrine of salvation by grace doth necessitate us to holiness of life, by constraining us to seek for it by faith in Christ, as a substantial part of that salvation which is freely given to us through Christ.

DIRECTION IX.

We must first receive the comforts of the gospel, that we may be able to perform sincerely the duties of the law.

EXPLICATION.

SINCE man fell from obedience to God, which he was enabled and engaged to perform by the comforts of his first happy state in paradise, God might have justly refused ever to give man again any comforts before-hand, to encourage him to his duty; that the way to holiness being hedged up against him

L 4

with

^a John vii. 37, 38.
xxxi. 18.

^a Psal. cxliii. 10.

^b Jer.

^c Psal. li. 10.

with the thorns and briars of fear, grief, and despair, he might never be able to escape the sentence of death which was denounced against his first transgression. This justice of God is manifest in the method of the legal covenant, wherein God promiseth us no life, comfort, or happiness, until we have thoroughly performed his law; and may be seen in the mount Sinai promulgation, explicated ^d throughout. And we are by nature so strongly addicted to this legal method of salvation, that it is a hard matter to dissuade those that live under the light of the gospel, from placing the duties of the law before the comforts of the gospel. If they cannot make salvation itself, yet they will be sure to make all the comforts of it, to depend upon their own works. They think 'it as unreasonable to expect comfort before duty, as wages before work, or the fruits of the earth before the husbandman's labour ^e. They account the only effectual way to secure the obedience we owe to the law of God, is, to ground all our comforts on the performance of it; and that the contrary doctrine strengthens the hands of the wicked, by prophesying peace to them, where there is no peace ^f; and openeth the flood-gates to all licentiousness. Therefore some preachers will advise men not to be solicitous and hasty of getting comfort, but that they should rather exercise themselves diligently in the performance of their duty: and they tell them, that, in so doing, their condition will be safe and happy at last; though they never enjoy any comfort of their salvation, as long as they live in this world.

That

^d Levit. xxvi. ^e 2 Tim. ii. 6. ^f Ezek. xiii. 16, 22.

That you may rightly understand what I have asserted in the direction against such vulgar errors, take notice, that I do not make the only place of gospel comfort to be before the duties of the law. I acknowledge, that God comforteth his people on every side^s, both before and after the performance of their duty, and that the greatest consolations do follow after duty; yet some comforts God giveth to his people before-hand, as advance-money, to furnish them for his service, though most of the pay comes in afterwards. Neither do I hereby speak any peace to those that continue in their sinful natural state: for the comforts I speak of, cannot be received without rejecting those false confidences whereby natural men harden themselves in sin; nor without that effectual working of the Spirit, whereby we are made good trees, that we may bring forth good fruit. Though they are given before the sincere practice of the law; yet they are not given to us in our corrupt sinful nature, but in and with the new holy nature; which immediately produceth a holy practice, though it must necessarily go before, as the cause before the effect: and they are no other than comforts of those spiritual benefits by which our new estate and nature is produced, and of which it is constituted and made up; as the comforts of redemption, justification, adoption, the gift of the Spirit, and the like. Neither do I intend here any transport or ravishment of joy and delight, but only such manner of comfort as rationally strengthens, in some measure, against the oppression of fear, grief, and despair, which we are liable unto, by reason of our natural sinfulness and misery.

This

This explanation of the sense of my assertion, is sufficient to answer some common objections against it. And I hope the truth of it will be fully evidenced by the following arguments.

First, This truth is a clear confectary from those principles of holiness that have been already confirmed. I have shewed, that we must have a good persuasion of our reconciliation with God, and of our happiness in heaven, and of our sufficient strength both to will and to do that which is acceptable to God through Jesus Christ, that we may be rationally inclined and bent to the practice of holiness; and that these endowments must be had, by receiving Christ himself, with his Spirit and all his fulness, by trusting on him for all his salvation, as he is freely promised to us in the gospel, and that by this faith we do as really receive Christ, as our food by eating and drinking. Now let right reason judge: can we be persuaded of the love of God, of our everlasting happiness, and our strength to serve God, and yet be without any comforts? Can the glad tidings of the gospel of peace be believed, and Christ and his Spirit actually received into the heart, without any relief to the soul from oppressing fear, grief, despair? Can the salvation of Christ be comfortless, or the bread and water of life without any sweet relish, to those that feed on him, with hungering and thirsting appetites? God will not give such benefits as these to those that do not desire and esteem them above the world. And certainly the very receiving of them will be comfortable to such, except they receive them blindfold; which they cannot do, when the very giving and bestowing them openeth the eyes of a sinner, and turns

him

him from darkness to light, whereby he doth, at least in some measure, see and perceive spiritually the things that concern his present and future peace, and reap some encouraging and strengthening comfort thereby to the practice of holiness.

Secondly, Peace, joy, hope, are recommended to us in scripture, as the spring of other holy duties; and fear and oppressing grief forbidden, as hinderances to true religion: "The peace of God keepeth our hearts and minds through Christ Jesus^h." "Be ye not sorry; for the joy of the Lord is your strengthⁱ." "Every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure^k." "Fear hath torment: he that feareth, is not made perfect in love^l." This is the reason why the apostle doubleth his exhortation, to rejoice in the Lord always, as a duty of exceeding weight and necessity^m. What are such duties but comfort itself? And can we think that these duties are necessary to our continuance in a holy practice, and yet not to the beginning of it, where the work is most difficult, and encouragement most needful? Therefore we must make haste, in the first place, to get a comfortable frame of spirit, if we would make haste, and not delay, to keep God's holy commandments.

Thirdly, The usual method of gospel doctrine, as it is delivered to us in the holy scriptures, is, first to comfort our hearts, and thereby to establish us in every good word and workⁿ. And it appears how clearly this method is adjusted in several epistles written by the apostles, wherein they first acquaint the

^h Phil. iv. 7.ⁱ Neh. viii. 10.^k 1 John iii. 3.^l 1 John iv. 18.^m Phil. iv. 4.ⁿ 2 Thess. ii. 17.

the churches with the rich grace of God towards them in Christ, and the spiritual blessings which they are made partakers of, for their strong consolation; and then they exhort them to a holy conversation answerable to such privileges. And it is not only the method of whole epistles, but of many particular exhortations to duty, wherein the comfortable benefits of the grace of God in Christ are made use of as arguments and motives to stir up the saints to a holy practice; which comfortable benefits must first be believed, and the comfort of them applied to our own souls, or else they will not be forcible to engage us to the practice for which they are intended. To give you a few instances of a multitude that might be alleged; we are exhorted to practice holy duties, because we are dead to sin and alive to God through Jesus Christ our Lord^o; and because sin shall not have dominion over us: for we are not under the law, but under grace^p; because we are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit; and God will quicken our mortal bodies by his Spirit dwelling in us^q; because our bodies are the members of Christ, and the temples of the Holy Ghost^r; because God hath made him to be sin for us who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him^s; and hath promised, that he will dwell in us, and walk in us, and be to us a father, and we shall be to him sons and daughters^t; because God hath forgiven us for Christ's sake; and accounteth us his dear children; and Christ hath loved us, and given himself for us; and we that were
some

^o Rom. vi. 11. ^p Rom. vi. 14. ^q Rom. viii. 9, 11.
^r 1 Cor. vi. 15, 19. ^s 2 Cor. v. 21. ^t 2 Cor. vi. 16, 18
 & vii. 15.

some time darkness, are now light in the Lord ^u; because we are risen with Christ; and when Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall we also appear with him in glory ^w; because God hath said, *I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee* ^x; because of the many promises made to us ^y. Search the scriptures, and you may, with delight, see that this is the vein that runneth through gospel exhortations; and you may find the like vein of comfort running through the prophetic exhortations in the Old Testament.

Some may object, "That the apostles used this method in their writings to saints who had practised holiness already, that so they might continue and increase therein." But to that I may easily reply, If it be a method needful for grown saints, much more for beginners, that find the work of obedience most difficult, and have most need of strong consolation. And I hope to shew, how we may be able to lay hold of these consolations by faith in the very first beginning of a holy life. Besides, the gospel proposeth peace and comfort freely to those that are not yet brought to holiness, that, if they have hearts to receive it, they may be converted from sin to righteousness. When the apostles entered into a house, they were first to say, Peace be to this house ^z. At their very first preaching to sinners, they acquainted them with the glad tidings of salvation by Christ, for every one that would receive it as a free gift by faith ^a. They assured them, if they would but trust heartily on Christ for all his salvation, they should

^u Eph. iv. 32, & v. 1, 2, 8. ^w Col. iii. 1, 4. ^x Heb. xii. 5. ^y 2 Cor. vii. 1. ^z Luke x. 5. ^a Acts iii. 26, xiii. 26, 32, & xvi. 30, 31.

should have it, although they were at present the chief of sinners; which was comfort sufficient for all that duly esteem spiritual comfort, hungering and thirsting after it. And this is a method agreeable to the design of the gospel; which is to advance the riches of the grace of God in all our spiritual enjoyments. God will give us his consolations before our good works, as well as after them, that we may know, that he giveth us everlasting consolation, and good hope through grace, and not through the procurement of our works^b.

Fourthly, The nature of the duties of the law requireth a comfortable state of the soul for the performance of them. I have before proved sufficiently, that they require a persuasion of our reconciliation with God, and of our future happiness, and strength whereby we may be able to walk in holy obedience: Joshua must be strong and very courageous, that he might observe to do according to the law that Moses the servant of the Lord commanded him^c. I shall instance briefly in the comforts, without which several great duties cannot be sincerely performed. Can we love God and delight in him above all, while we look upon him as our everlasting enemy; and apprehend no love and mercy in him towards us, that may render him a suitable good for us, and lovely in our eyes? What doleful melody will the heart make in the duty of praise, if we account, that all those perfections for which we praise him, will rather aggravate our misery, than make us happy? What a heartless work will it be to pray to him, and to offer up ourselves to his service, if we have no comfortable hope

^b 2 Theff. ii. 16.^c Josh. i. 7.

hope that he will accept us? Is it possible for us to free ourselves from carking cares, by casting our care upon the Lord, if we do not apprehend he careth for us? Can we be patient in affliction with chearfulness, and under persecutions, except we have peace with God, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God^d? What reason can persuade us to submit willingly, according to our duty, to the stroke of present death, if God be pleased to lay it upon us, when we have no comforts to relieve us against the horrible fear of intolerable torments in hell for ever?

If we should be called to suffer martyrdom for the protestant religion, as our ancestors in this nation have done, we should find it necessary to abandon the late upstart notions that have been bred in a time of ease, and to embrace the comfortable doctrine of former protestants, which, through the grace of God, made so many courageous and joyful martyrs.

Fifthly, The state of those that are to be brought from sin to godliness, requires necessarily, that, after they be convinced of the vanity of their former false confidences, and of their deadness in original sin, and subjection to the wrath of God, they should have a supply of new gospel comforts afforded, to encourage their fainting souls to holy practices. How little do many physicians of souls consider the condition of their unconverted patients, that are altogether without spiritual life and strength, and are or must be convinced thereof? He that prescribeth bodily exercise to a man lying bed-ridden under a dead palsy, before any effectual means be used to strengthen him, deserveth the name of a merciless insulting tormentor,
rather

^d Rom. v. 1, 2, 3.

rather than of a wise and tender-hearted physician. How unreasonable is it to prescribe the immediate practice of love to God, and universal obedience to him out of love, as the means of cure, for those that see nothing but wrath and enmity in God towards them in their present condition? What is it but to require a man to work without strength, promising him, that he shall have strength when his work is done? for comfort or joy is so called, because it strengtheneth^c. True it is, that the law, which is the ministration of condemnation, obligeth them to obedience: but our merciful God expecteth no sincere performance of his law, from such impotent miserable wretches, in order to their salvation by Christ, till he hath first delivered them, in some measure, from those discomforts, slavish fears, and despondencies, that hold them captive under the law of sin and death. We may require a strong healthy person first to work, and then to expect meat, drink, and wages; but a fainting, famished person, must first have food, or a reviving cordial, to strengthen his heart, before he can work.

Sixthly, Both scripture and experience shews, that this is the method whereby God bringeth his people from sin to holiness. Though some of them are brought under terrors for a while, that sin may be the more imbittered, and the salvation of Christ rendered more precious and acceptable to them; yet such are again delivered from their terrors by the comfort of God's salvation, that they may be fitted for holiness. And generally a holy life beginneth with comfort, and is maintained by it. God gave to Adam, at his first

first creation, the comfort of his love and favour, and the happiness of paradise, to encourage him to obedience; and, when he had lost those comforts by the fall, he was no longer able to obey, until he was restored by new comfort of the promised seed. Christ, the second Adam, set God always before his face; and he knew, that, because God was at his right hand, he should not be moved, therefore his heart was glad, and his glory rejoiced ^c. This made him willing to bear his agony and bloody sweat, and to be obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. God drew the Israelites to obedience with the cords of a man, with the bands of love, by taking off the yoke on their jaws, and laying meat before them ^d. David telleth us, for our instruction, how he was brought to a holy conversation: "Thy loving kindness is before mine eyes: and I have walked in thy truth ^e." "Lord, I have hoped for thy salvation, and done thy commandments ^f." We have several examples in the New Testament of the joy that sinners had in the first receiving of Christ ^g. And, when the gospel first came to the Thessalonians, "they received the word in much affliction, with joy in the Holy Ghost ^h." "When the Gentiles heard the word of God, they were glad: and as many as were ordained to eternal life, believed ⁱ." The apostle Paul was constrained by the love of Christ, to give up himself to live to Christ ^j. I dare appeal to the experience of any that obey God out of hearty love. Let them examine themselves, and consider, whether they were

M

brought

^f Psal. xvi. 8, 9. ^g Hos. xi. 4. ^h Psal. xxvi. 3.
ⁱ Psal. cxix. 166. ^j Acts ii. 41. ^k 1 Theff. i. 4, 5, 6.
^l Acts xiii. 48. ^m 2 Cor. v. 14, 15.

brought to give up themselves to serve God in love, without comfortable apprehensions of the love of God towards them? I dare say, there are no such prodigies in the new birth.

Seventhly, What comfortless religion do those make, that allow people no comfort before-hand, to strengthen them for holy performances, which are very cross, displeasing and grievous to their natural inclinations, as the plucking out a right eye, cutting off a right hand; but would have them first to do such things with love and delight, under all their present fears, despondencies, and corrupt inclinations, and to hope, that, by doing the work thoroughly and sincerely, they shall at last attain to a more comfortable state? All true spiritual comfort, as well as salvation, is indeed quite banished out of the world, if it be suspended upon the condition of our good works; which hath already appeared to be the condition of the law, that worketh no comfort, but wrath*. This makes the way of godliness odious to many. They think they shall never enjoy a pleasant hour in this world, if they walk in them; and they had rather comfort themselves with sinful pleasures, than have no comfort at all. Others labour a while in such a comfortless religion, with inward fretting and repining at the bondage of it, and at last grow weary, and throw off all religion, because they know none better. They that bind such heavy burdens upon men, and grievous to be borne, will plead, that they are not to be blamed, because they do but preach the gospel of God and Christ: whereas indeed they preach a gospel of man's own forging, contrary to the nature

* Rom. iv. 14, 15.

nature of the true gospel of Christ, which is glad tidings of great joy to all people ^p. An uncomfortable gospel cannot proceed from God the Father, who is the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort ^q; nor from Christ, who is the consolation of Israel ^r; nor from the Spirit, who is the Comforter ^s. God meeteth him that rejoiceth, and worketh righteousness ^t. He will be served with gladness and singing; as he shewed by the type of variety of music, and great numbers of musicians in the temple. Christ speaks to us by his gospel, that his joy may abide in us, and that our joy may be full ^u. No sorrow is approved of by God, except godly sorrow, which can never be in us without some comfort of the love of God toward us. They that are offended at the uncomfortableness of a religious life, never yet knew the true way of religion; else they would find, that the ways of wisdom are ways of pleasantness, and all her paths peace ^w.

^p Luke ii. 10.^q John xiv. 16, 17.^w Prov. iii. 17.^r 2 Cor. i. 3.^s Isa. lxiv. 5.^t Luke ii. 25.^u John xv. 11.

DIRECTION X.

That we may be prepared by the comforts of the gospel to perform sincerely the duties of the law, we must get some assurance of our salvation, in that very faith whereby Christ himself is received into our hearts: therefore we must endeavour to believe on Christ confidently, persuading and assuring ourselves, in the act of believing, that God freely giveth to us an interest in Christ and his salvation, according to his gracious promise.

EXPLICATION.

IT is evident, that those comforts of the gospel that are necessary to a holy practice, cannot be truly received without some *assurance* of our interest in Christ and his salvation; for some of these comforts consist in a good *persuasion* of our reconciliation with God, and of our future heavenly happiness, and of strength both to will and to do that which is acceptable to God through Christ; as hath been before shewed. Hence it will clearly follow, that this assurance is very necessary to enable us for the practice of holiness, as those comforts that must go before the duties of the law in order of nature, as the cause goeth before the effect, though not in any distance of time. My present work is, to shew, what this assurance is, that is so necessary unto holiness, and which I have here asserted we must act, in that very faith whereby we receive Christ himself into our hearts, even in justifying saving faith. This doctrine seemeth strange to many that profess themselves protestants a late days; whereas it was formerly highly owned

by

by the chief protestants whom God made use of to restore the purity of the gospel, and to maintain it against the papists for many years. They commonly taught, That faith was a persuasion or confidence of our own salvation by Christ; and that we must be sure to apply Christ and his salvation to ourselves in believing. And this doctrine was one of the great engines whereby they prevailed to overthrow the popish superstition, whereof doubtfulness of salvation is one of the principal pillars. But many of the successors of those protestants have deserted them, and left their writings to be shamefully insulted by the papists. And this innovation hath been of longer standing amongst us, than several other parts of our new divinity, and maintained by those that profess to abhor that corrupt doctrine which the papists have built upon such principles. Modern divines may think they stand upon the shoulders of their predecessors, whose labours they enjoy, and that they can see farther than they; as the schoolmen might have like thoughts of the ancient fathers: but, for all this, they may not be able to see so far, if the eyes of their predecessors were better enlightened by the Spirit of God, to understand the mystery of the gospel. And why may we not judge that it is so in the present case? The eyes of men in these late years have been blinded in this point of assurance by many false imaginations. They think, because salvation is not promised to us absolutely, but upon condition of believing on Christ for it; therefore we must first believe directly on Christ for our salvation, and, after that, we must reflect our minds upon our faith, and examine it by several marks and signs, especially by the fruit of sin-

cere obedience; and if, upon this examination, we find out certainly, that it is true saving faith, then, and not before, we may believe assuredly, that we in particular shall be saved. On this account they say, that our salvation is by the direct, and our assurance by the reflex act of faith; and that many have true faith, and shall be saved, that never have any assurance of their salvation as long as they live in this world. They find, by scripture and experience, that many precious saints of God are frequently troubled with doubtings, whether they shall be saved, and whether their faith and obedience be sincere, so that they cannot see assurance in themselves: therefore they conclude, that assurance must not be accounted absolutely necessary to justifying faith and salvation, lest we should make the hearts of doubting saints sad, and drive them to despair. They account that former protestants were guilty of a manifest absurdity, in making assurance to be of the nature and definition of saving faith; because all that hear the gospel, are bound to saving faith, and yet they are not bound absolutely to believe, that they themselves shall be saved; for then many of them would be bound to believe that which is not declared in the gospel concerning them in particular; yea, that which is a plain lie, because the gospel sheweth, that many of those that are called, are not chosen to salvation, but perish for ever^{*}. No wonder if the appearance of so great an absurdity move many to imagine, that saving faith is a trusting or resting on Christ as the only sufficient means of salvation, without any assurance; or, that it is a desiring and venturing to trust or rely upon him,

^{*} Matt. xx. 16.

in a mere state of suspense and uncertainty concerning our salvation, or with a probable opinion or conjectural hope of it at best.

Another objection against this doctrine of assurance is, That it destroyeth self-examination; bringeth forth the evil fruits of pride and arrogance, as if they knew their places in heaven already before the day of judgment; causeth carelessness of duty, carnal security, all manner of licentiousness. And this maketh them commend doubtfulness of our salvation, as necessary to maintain in us humility, religious fears, watchfulness, much searching and trying our spiritual state and ways, diligence in good works, and all devotion.

Against all these contrary imaginations, I shall endeavour to maintain this ancient protestant doctrine of assurance, which I have expressed in the direction. And, first, I shall lay down some observations for the right understanding of it, which will be sufficient to turn the edge of the strongest objections that can be made against it.

First, Observe diligently, that the assurance directed unto, is not a persuasion that we have *already* received Christ and his salvation, or that we have been already brought into a state of grace; but only, that God is pleased graciously to give Christ and his salvation unto us, and to bring us into a state of grace, though we have been altogether in a state of sin and death until this present time: so that this doctrine doth not at all tend to breed presumption in wicked and unregenerate men, that their state is good already; but only encourageth them to come to Christ confidently

for a good state. I acknowledge, that we may, yea many must be taught to doubt whether their present state be good; and that it is humility so to do; and that we must find out the certainty and sincerity of our faith and obedience by self-examination, before we can have a well-grounded assurance that we are in a state of grace and salvation already; and that such an assurance belongeth to that which they call the reflex act of faith (if any act of faith can be made of it, it being spiritual sense or feeling of what is in myself), and is not of the essence of that faith whereby we are justified and saved; and that many precious saints are without it, and subject to many doubts that are contrary to it; so that they may not know at all that it shall go well with them at the day of judgment; and that it may be sometimes intermitted, if not wholly lost after it is gotten; and that we should strive to walk holily, that we may attain to it, because it is very useful for our growth and increase in faith, and in all holiness. Most protestants among us, when they speak or write of assurance, mean only that which is by reflexion. And I have said enough briefly to shew, that what I assert, is consistent with the doctrine which is commonly received concerning it, and destructive to none of the good fruits of it; therefore not guilty of those evils that some falsely charge it with. This kind of assurance, which I speak of, answereth not the question, Whether I am already in a state of grace and salvation? There is another great question that the soul must answer, that it may get into a state of grace, Whether God be graciously pleased now to bestow Christ and his salvation upon me, though I have been hitherto a very wicked creature?

ture? We must be sure to resolve this question comfortably, by another kind of assurance in the direct act of faith, wherein we are to persuade ourselves (without reflecting upon any good qualifications in ourselves), that God is ready graciously to receive us into the arms of his saving mercy in Christ, notwithstanding all our former wickedness, according to that gracious promise, *I will call them my people, which were not my people; and her, beloved, which was not beloved. And it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people, there shall they be called, the children of the living God* ^v.

Secondly, The assurance directed unto, is not a persuasion of our salvation, whatever we do; or however we live and walk; but only in a limited way through mere free grace in Christ, by partaking of holiness as well as forgiveness, and by walking in the way of holiness to the enjoyment of the glory of God. We shall not heartily desire or endeavour to assure ourselves of such a salvation as this is, if we be not brought first to see our own sinfulness and misery, and to despair of our own righteousness and strength, and to hunger and thirst for the sanctifying as well as justifying grace of God in Christ; that so we may walk in the ways of holiness, to the enjoyment of heavenly glory. The faith whereby we receive Christ, must have in it, not only a persuasion of happiness, but these and the like good qualifications, that will make it a most holy faith. Certainly an assurance thus qualified, will not beget any pride in us, but rather humility and self-loathing, except any account it pride, to rejoice and glory in Christ, when we have no confidence

fidence in the flesh ^z. It will not destroy religious fear, and breed carnal security ; but rather it will make us fear going aside from Christ, our only refuge and security, and walking after the flesh. Noah had cause to enter into the ark, and to abide there with assurance of his preservation ; yet he might well be afraid to venture out of the ark, because he was persuaded, that continuance in the ark was his only safety from perishing in the flood. And how can a persuasion of salvation in a way of holiness, breed slothfulness in duty, carelessness, and licentiousness ? It doth rather mightily allure us, and stir us up to *be always abounding in the work of the Lord, for as much as we know, that our labour shall not be in vain in the Lord* ^a. They that are persuaded of the free grace of God toward them in Christ, are not indeed solicitous about earning their salvation by their own legal works. And satan is ready to suggest to them, that this is a sinful carelessness, and tendeth to licentiousness. But they that will believe this false suggestion of satan, shew plainly, that they do not yet know what it is to serve God in love, and that they are held in, to all their obedience, by the bit and bridle of slavish fear, *as the horse and mule, that have no understanding* ^b.

Thirdly, Beware of thinking so highly of this assurance, as if it were inconsistent with any doubting in the same soul. A great reason why many protestants have receded from the doctrine of their ancestors in this point, is, because they think there can be no true assurance of salvation in any that are troubled with doubtings, as they find many be, whom they

^z Phil. iii. 3.

^a 1 Cor. xv. 58.

^b Psal. xxxii. 9.

they cannot but own as true believers, and precious saints of God. True indeed, this assurance must be contrary to doubtings in the nature of it ; and so, if it were perfect in the highest degree, it would exclude all doubting out of the soul, and it doth now exclude it in some degree. But is there not flesh as well as spirit in the best saints on earth ^c ? Is there not *a law in their members warring against the law of their minds* ^d ? May not one that truly believeth, say, *Lord help my unbelief* ^e ? Can any on earth say, they have received any grace in the highest degree, and that they are wholly free from the contrary corruption ? Why then should we think, that assurance cannot be true, except it be perfect, and free the soul from all doubtings ? The apostle accounts it a great blessing to the Thessalonians, that they had much assurance ; intimating, that some true assurance might be in a less degree ^f. Peter had some good assurance of Christ's help, when he walked on the water at Christ's command ; and yet he had some doubtfulness in him, as his fear shewed when he saw the wind boisterous. He had some faith contrary to doubting, though it were but little, as Christ's words to him shew, *O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt* ^g ? It is strange if the flesh and the devil should never oppose a true assurance, and assault it with doubtings. A believer may be sometimes so overwhelmed with doubtings, that he may not be able to perceive an assurance in himself. He is so far from knowing his place in heaven already (as some scoffingly object), that he will say, that he knoweth not any assurance that he hath of being there,

^c Gal. v. 17.
^f 1 Thes. i. 5.

^d Rom. vii. 23.
^g Matt. xiv. 29, 30, 31.

^e Mark ix. 24.

there, and needeth diligent self-examination to find it out. Yet, if at that time he can blame his soul for doubting, *Why art thou cast down, O my soul? and why art thou disquieted within me? hope thou in God; for I shall yet praise him*^h; if he can condemn his doubtings as sinful, and say with himself, *This is my infirmity*ⁱ; these doubtings are of the flesh, and of the devil; if he still endeavour to call God, Father, and complain to him, that he doubteth whether he be his father, and pray, that God will give him the assurance of his fatherly love, which he is not sensible of, and dispel those fears and doubtings: I say, that such a one hath some true assurance, though he must strive to grow to a higher degree; for, if he were not persuaded of the truth of the love of God towards him, he could not rationally condemn his fears and doubts concerning it as sinful; neither could he rationally pray to God as his father, or that God would assure him of that love that he doth not think to be true.

Do but grant that it is the nature of saving faith, thus to resist and struggle with slavish fears of wrath, and doubting of our own salvation; and you grant, in effect, that there is, and must be, something of assurance of our salvation in saving faith, whereby it resisteth doubtings; and you are, in effect, of the same judgment with me in the assertion, however strange my expressions seem to you. If this that I have said, concerning our imperfection in assurance, as well as in other graces, were well considered, this ancient protestant doctrine would be freed much from prejudice, and gain more esteem among us.

Fourthly,

^h Psal. xlii. 11.

ⁱ Psal. lxxvii. 10.

Fourthly, In the *last* place, Let it be well observed, that the reason why we are to assure ourselves in our faith, that God freely giveth Christ and his salvation to us particularly, is not, because it is a truth before we believe it, but because it becometh a certain truth when we believe it, and because it will never be true, except we do in some measure persuade and assure ourselves that it is so. We have no absolute promise or declaration in scripture, that God certainly will or doth give Christ and his salvation to any one of us in particular; neither do we know it to be true already by scripture, or sense, or reason, before we assure ourselves absolutely of it: yea, we are without Christ's salvation at present, in a state of sin and misery, under the curse and wrath of God. Only I shall prove, that we are bound, by the command of God, thus to assure ourselves: and the scripture doth sufficiently warrant us, that we shall not deceive ourselves in believing a lie: but according to our faith, so shall it be to us*. This is a strange kind of assurance, far different from other ordinary kinds; and therefore no wonder if it be found weak and imperfect, and difficult to be obtained, and assaulted with many doubts. We are constrained to believe other things on the clear evidence we have that they are true, and would remain true, whether we believe them or no; so that we cannot deny our assent, without rebelling against the light of our senses, reason, or conscience. But here our assurance is not impressed on our thoughts by any evidence of the thing; but we must work it out in ourselves by the assistance of the Spirit of God, and thereby we bring our own thoughts into capti-

* Matt ix 29.

captivity to the obedience of Christ. None but God can justly require of us this kind of assurance, because he only *calleth those things that are not, as though they were*^l. He only can give existence to things that yet are not, and make a thing to be true, upon our believing it, that was not true before. He only can make good that promise, *What things soever ye desire when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them*^m. *Who is he that saith, and it cometh to pass, when the Lord commandeth it not*ⁿ? Therefore this faith is due to God only, and greatly redoundeth to his glory. Men will often require a believing something like it: as when one says, *I will forgive your offence, and be your friend, if I can find that you believe it, and that you take me for a friend*. But their fallible word is not sufficient ground to make us persuade ourselves absolutely, that we shall have their promised favour. The faith of miracles gives us some light in this matter. Christ assured them on whom they were wrought, and who had power given them of working them, that the miracles should be wrought, if they believed without doubting of the event^o. And there is a reason for this resemblance; because the end of working miracles was, to confirm the doctrine of the gospel of salvation by faith in Christ's name, as the scriptures clearly shew: and indeed the salvation of a sinner is a very great miracle. It is reported that wizards do often require those that come to them, that they should believe they shall obtain what they desire of them, or at least that they are able to fulfil their desires; whereby the devil,

^l Rom. iv. 17.^m Mark xi. 24.ⁿ Lam. iii. 37.^o Mark xi. 22, 23.

vil, the master of those wizards, sheweth himself to be God's ape, and that he would fain have that honour and glory ascribed to himself that is due to God alone.

Having thus explained the nature of that assurance which I have directed unto, I shall now produce several arguments to prove, that there is, and must necessarily be, such an assurance or persuasion of our salvation in saving faith itself.

First, This assurance of salvation is implied in the description, before given of that faith, whereby we receive Christ, and his salvation, into our hearts. I described faith to be a grace of the Spirit, whereby we heartily believe the gospel, and also believe on Christ, as he is revealed and freely promised to us therein, for all his salvation. And I shewed, in the explanation, that believing on Christ is the same with resting, relying, leaning, staying ourselves on Christ, or God thro' Christ, for our salvation. It may be, some will like that description the better, because faith was there described by terms that are ordinarily used, even by those that deny the necessity of assurance; but these ordinary terms do sufficiently include assurance in the nature of faith, and they cannot stand without it. And this sheweth, that many hold the doctrine of assurance implicitly, and profess it, tho' they think the contrary. Believing on Christ for salvation, as freely promised to us, must needs include a dependence on Christ, with a persuasion, that salvation shall be freely given,

as it is freely promised to us. Believing with a divine faith, grounded on the infallible truth of the free promise, if it did not in some measure exclude a mere suspence, and wavering opinion or conjecture, were not worthy to be so called. Some may be so absurd as to say, that faith is only a believing, that we shall be saved by Christ if we perform such conditions as he requireth : and then indeed it will leave us where it found us, as to any certainty of salvation, until those conditions be performed. But I have already prevented such an absurdity, by shewing, that this believing on Christ, is itself, not only the condition of our salvation, but also the instrument whereby we actually receive it. *Believing*, being the proper act of faith, must needs have the same contraries to it ; as *flaggering*^p, *wavering*^q, *doubting*^r, *fear*^s. These contraries do much illustrate the nature of faith ; and do shew, that believing must have some confidence in it, else it would have doubting in the very nature of it : for what man that understandeth the preciousness of his immortal soul, and his danger of losing it, can ever avoid fear, doubting, and trouble of heart, by any believing whereby he doth not at all assure himself of his salvation ? The other terms of trusting and resting on Jesus Christ, &c. whereby faith is often described by orthodox teachers, must include assurance of salvation, because they signify the same thing with believing on Christ. The soul must have its sufficient support, to bear it up against oppressing fears,

^p Rom. iv. 20.
^q Mark v. 36.

^r Heb. x. 23.

^s Matt. xiv. 31

fears, troubles, cares, despair, that it may thus trust and rest. The right manner of trusting and hoping in the Lord, is, by assuring ourselves, against all fears and doubtings, that "the Lord is our God, and he is become our salvation. I trusted in thee, O Lord: I said, thou art my God". The Lord "is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer; my God, my strength, in whom I will trust". "Behold, God is my salvation: I will trust and not be afraid". O my soul, hope thou in God, "who is the health of my countenance, and my God". True hope is grounded in God only, that he will bless us, that it may be an anchor for the soul, sure and steadfast. If you trust, rely, and stay yourselves on Christ, or hope in him, without assuring yourselves at all of salvation by him, you make no better use of him, than if he were a broken reed: and, if you would stay yourselves on the Lord, you must look upon him as your God; as the prophet teacheth, let him trust in the name of the Lord, and stay upon his God. If you would rest in the Lord, you must believe, that he dealeth bountifully with you, or else, for ought you know, you may make your bed in hell. And you will shew little regard of Christ, and of your own soul, if you dare to rest under the wrath of God, without any persuasion of a sure interest in Christ. People may please themselves with such a trusting or resting, &c. when they are at ease; but, in time of temptation, it vanisheth away, and appeareth

N

peareth

^a Psal. xxxi. 14.^a Psal. xviii. 2.^w Isa. xii. 2.^a Psal. xlii. 11.^y Heb. vi. 17, 18, 19.^a Isa. i. 10.^a Psal. cxvi. 7.

peareth to be no true faith, but is turned into shame. The soul that liveth in such wavering and doubting concerning salvation, doth not stay itself nor rest at all; but is like a wave of the sea, driven with the wind, and tossed; he is a double-minded man, unstable in all his ways^b. If you continue in mere suspense and doubtfulness of salvation by Christ, your desire to trust, is but a lazy woulding, without any fixed resolution, and you dare not yet venture to trust on him stedfastly. If you call it only your desire to trust and rely on Jesus Christ. I may answer, that you cannot do this much in a right manner, except you desire and venture to persuade and assure yourselves of your salvation by Christ, notwithstanding all the causes that you have to doubt and fear the contrary. If it be objected, that we may trust on Christ only as a sufficient means of salvation, without any assurance of the effect; I shall acknowledge, that the sufficiency of God and Christ is a good ground for us to rest on: but we must understand by it, not only a sufficiency of power, but also of good-will and mercy towards us; for what have we to do more with the sufficiency of God's and Christ's power than fallen angels, without his good will towards us? And, if this be truly believed, it will exclude doubtfulness concerning your salvation.

Secondly, Several places of scripture declare positively and expressly, that we are to be assured of our salvation in that faith whereby we are justified and saved. I shall produce some instances. We are
exhorted

^b Jam. i. 6, 8.

exhorted to *draw near to God with full assurance of faith*^c. Many apply this text to that which they call the *reflex act* of faith, because they imagine that all assurance must needs be by reflexion. But the words of the text do clearly teach us to understand it of that act of faith whereby we draw near to God; that is, the direct act; and it is that very faith whereby the just do live, even justifying, saving faith^d. And this assurance must be full, at least in the true and proper nature of it, in opposition unto mere doubtfulness and uncertainty, tho' we are yet further to labour for that which is full in the highest degree of perfection. And the same faith whereby we are exhorted to draw nigh unto God, and whereby the just liveth, is, a little after^e, affirmed to be the substance of things hoped for, and the evidence of things not seen. Why should saving faith have these high titles and attributes given to it, if it did not contain in it a sure persuasion of the great things of our salvation hoped for, which maketh them to be evident to the eyes of our mind, as if they were already present in their substance, tho' yet not visible to our bodily eyes? That faith whereby we are made partakers of Christ, and to be Christ's house, must be worthy to be called confidence, and accompanied with rejoicing hope: "Whose house
"are we, if we hold fast the confidence and re-
"joicing of the hope firm unto the end^f. What is confidence concerning any thing, but trusting concerning it, with a firm persuasion of the truth of it? If we have only a strong opinion concern-

N 2

ing

^c Heb. x. 22. ^d ver. 38. ^e Chap. xi. 1. ^f Heb. iii. 6, 14.

ing a thing, without any absolute certainty, we use to say, that we are not altogether confident of it. The faith whereby we are justified, must be in a measure like to the faith whereby Abraham *against hope believed in hope*, that his seed should certainly be multiplied according to the promise of God; tho', by reason of the deadness of his own body, and of Sarah's womb, he could have no evidence from his own qualifications to assure himself of it; but all appearances were rather to the contrary; as the apostle teacheth clearly ^e. As absolute as this promise was, thus made to Abraham, yet it was not to be fulfilled without this assurance of faith; and, by the like faith, the free promises of salvation by Christ, will be absolutely fulfilled to us. The apostle James expressly requireth, that we should ask good things of God in faith, nothing doubting; which includeth assurance manifestly: and he tells us plainly, that without it a man ought not to think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord. Therefore we may firmly conclude, that without it we shall not receive the salvation of Christ ^h. And that which the apostle James requireth us not to doubt of, is the obtaining the things that we ask; as we may learn from an instruction to the same purpose given to us by Christ himself, "What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them ⁱ." More places of scripture might be alledged to the same purpose: but these are sufficient to evince, that we are bound to assure ourselves of our salvation in faith
itself,

^e Rom. iv. 18, 19, 23, 24.
xi. 24.

^h Jam. i. 6, 7.

ⁱ Mark

itself, or else we are never likely to enjoy it ; and that it is not humility, but rather proud disobedience, to live in a state of mere suspense and doubtfulness concerning our salvation ; and that this assurance must be in the direct act of faith whereby we are justified and saved. For, as for that which is called the reflex act of faith, it is a certain truth, and generally owned, that it is not absolutely necessary to salvation to any ; and that it is sinful and pernicious to many to believe, that they are already entered into a state of grace and salvation.

Thirdly, God giveth us sufficient ground in scripture to come to Christ with confident faith, at the very first ; trusting assuredly, that Christ and his salvation shall be given to us without any failing and delay, however vile and sinful our condition hath been hitherto. The scripture speaketh to the vilest sinners in such a manner as if it were framed on purpose to beget assurance of salvation in them immediately ^k. This promise is universal, that whosoever believeth on Christ, shall not be ashamed, without making a difference between Jew and Greek ^l. And this promise is confirmed by the blood of Christ, who was given for the world, and lifted up upon the cross for this very end, that *whosoever believeth on him, should not perish, but have everlasting life* ^m. His invitation is free to any, *If any man thirst, let him come to me and drink* ; and this drink is promised to every one that believeth ⁿ. The command of believing is propounded, not only in general, but in particular ; and the promise of

N 3

salvation

^k Acts ii. 39. & iii. 26.

^l Rom. 10, 11, 12.

ⁿ John iii. 14, 15, 16.

ⁿ John vii. 37, 39

salvation upon believing, is also applied personally, and that to such as have been hitherto in a state of sin and wrath; as to the wicked, persecuting, self-murdering jailor^o. “Believe on the Lord Jesus, “and thou shalt be saved, and thine house.” God commanded them that walked altogether in sin hitherto, to call him their own father, in their very first returning^p. So^q, God saith, he will say, *Thou art my people*; and they shall say, *Thou art my God*: confidently averring their personal interest in him. God hath joined confidence and salvation inseparably together: *In returning and rest shall ye be saved; in quietness and in confidence shall be your strength^r*. What a poor slender use and improvement do many make of these discoveries of the rich grace of God towards sinners, who say, that, if we see that we have performed the condition of believing, then we may take Christ confidently as our own? They skip over the first and principal use they ought to make of them. The very performance of the condition is, to take Christ as our own immediately, and to eat him and drink him, by believing confidently on him for our salvation. If an honest rich man say to a poor woman, *I promise to be thy husband if thou wilt have me*; say but the word, and *I am thine*; may not she presently answer confidently, *Then thou art my husband, and I claim thee for my husband*: And should she not rather say so, than say, *I believe not what thou sayest*? If an honest man say, *Do but take this gift, and it is your own*; do but eat and drink, and you are freely welcome;

^o Acts xvi. 31. ^p Jer. iii. 4. ^q Hos. ii. 23. ^r Isa. xxx. 15.

welcome; may not I take the gift, and eat and drink at first, without any further ado, and with assurance that it is mine freely? If I do it doubtingly, I disparage the honesty and credit of the donor, as if he were not a man of his word. In like manner, if, fearing to be too confident, lest we should believe a lie, we should come to Christ doubtingly, and in mere suspense, whether we shall be freely entertained, after all God's free invitations and promises, should we not disparage the faithfulness of God? and should we not be guilty of making God a liar? as the apostle John teacheth, because of our not believing the record which God gave of his Son: *And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life; and this life is in his son**. And what if the salvation promised, be not absolutely intended for all to whom the gospel cometh? It is enough, that God giveth us his faithful word, that they that believe shall have it, and none else; and hath absolutely intended to fulfil his word that none shall find it to be a lie to them; and hath joined believing and salvation inseparably together. On this ground God may justly cause the promise of this salvation to be published to all, and may justly require all to believe on him assuredly for their own salvation, that so it may appear whether they will give him the glory of his truth; and, if they will not, he may justly reject them, and punish them severely for dishonouring him by their unbelief. In this case, we must not look to the secret decrees of God, but to his revealed promises and command. Thus

N 4

God

* 1 John v. 10, 11.

God promised to the Israelites in the wilderness, that he would give them the land of Canaan, and would fight for them against their enemies; and required them not to fear or be discouraged, that so the promise might be fulfilled to them: yet God never absolutely decreed or intended, that those Israelites should enter in; as the event did quickly manifest^r. Yet were they not bound in this case to trust confidently in God, to give them victory over their enemies, and to give them the possession of the land; had they not sufficient ground for such a faith? was it not just with God to consume them in the wilderness for their unbelief? *Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being made of entering into this everlasting rest through Christ, we should come short of it, and fall after the same example of unbelief*^u.

Fourthly, The professors of true godliness that we read of thro' the scripture of the Old and New Testament, did commonly profess their assurance and persuasion of their interest in God and his salvation, and were directed by the word of God so to do; and true saints had still some true assurance of it. And we have no cause to judge, that this assurance was grounded on the certainty of their own good qualifications, but rather on the promises of God by the direct act of faith. We may judge of the ordinary profession of the frame of spirit that was in saints, by some instances. I shall begin with the profession that the church made when it was very corrupt, at its first coming out of Egypt, when few of them could assure themselves, by their own good quali-

^r Deut. i. 20, 21, 29, 30.

^u Heb. iv. 1, 11.

qualifications, that they were in a state of grace already; which many now imagine to be the only way of assurance. Even in that corrupt time, the children of Israel sung that triumphant song of Moses, *The Lord is my strength and my song, and he is become my salvation: he is my God, &c.* ^w. Moses taught them, in this song, to assure themselves of their own personal interest in the salvation; and he guided them to the practice of their duty. And they did not find fault with Moses, as some do with ministers in these days, for putting them to express more confidence in their song, than they could find ground for in their qualifications; but they applied themselves to the exercise of their faith, agreeably to their song: and, doubtless, this faith was unfeigned in some few of them, tho' but feigned in others; for it is testified of them, that then they believed his words, they sang his praise ^x. Several other psalms and songs that were by divine appointment in common use under the Old Testament, are as clear an evidence as we can desire, of that assurance of faith which was commonly professed, and that people were generally bound to, under the Old Testament ^y. Many other psalms or expressions in psalms might be alledged. The spirits of few, in comparison, could have thoroughly complied with such psalms, though they were true believers, if all the assurance of the love of God must altogether depend upon the certain knowledge of the sincerity of their own hearts. We have a great cloud of witnesses gathered out of the whole history of the Old Testament

^w Exod. xv. 2.
xxvii. xlv. xlvii.

^x Psal. cvi. 12.

^y Psal. xxiii.

Testament ^z, who did, and suffered, and obtained great things by faith; whose examples are produced on purpose that we may follow them in believing, to the saving of our souls ^a. And, if we consider these examples particularly, we shall find, that many of them do evidently guide us to such a saving faith as hath an assurance of the effect contained in the nature of it. I confess, we read several times of the fears and doubtings of the saints under the Old Testament; but we read also how their faith opposed such fears and doubts, and how they themselves condemned them as contrary to faith, as in the Psalms ^b. The most mournful psalm in scripture begins with an expression of some assurance ^c. And we may note, that the doubtings that we meet with of the saints of old, were commonly occasioned by some extraordinary affliction, or some heinous transgression; not by common failings, or the common original depravation of nature, or the uncertainty of their election, or any thought that it is humility to doubt, and that they were not bound to be confident of God's salvation, because then many might be bound to believe a lie. It is hard to find any of these occasions of doubting under the Old Testament, though they are grown so rife among us now under the New Testament.

In the time of the apostles, we may well expect that the assurance of faith grew higher, because the salvation of Christ was revealed, and the spirit of adoption poured forth plentifully, and the church made free from its former bondage under the terrifying

^z Heb. xi. ^a Heb. x. 39. ^b Psal. xlii. 11. xxxi. 22. & lxxviii. 7, 10. ^c Psal. lxxxviii. 1.

rising legal covenant. Paul could prove to primitive christians, by appeals to their own experience, that they were the *children and heirs of God*, because they had not received the spirit of bondage again unto fear, but the spirit of adoption, whereby they cry, *Abba, Father*. The Spirit itself bearing witness with our spirits, (or beareth our spirits witness as the Syriac and vulgar Latin render it, and as the like Greek phrase is rendered ^d) *that we are the children of God*. And, if children, then heirs ^e. And the apostle tells the Ephesians, that, after they believed, *they were sealed with the holy Spirit, which was the earnest of their inheritance* ^f. They were sealed from the same time that they believed; for the original words are in the same tense. If this witness, seal, and earnest of the Spirit had not been ordinary to believers, it would not have been sufficient to prove, that they were the children of God; and such manner of arguing might have driven some to despair, that wanted the witness, seal, and earnest.

Let us inquire now, whether the Spirit beareth witness that we are the children of God, and enableth us to cry, *Abba, Father*, by the direct act, or by that which they call the reflex act of faith? For we must not think that it is done by an enthusiasm, without any ordinary means; nor can we reasonably imagine, that no true believers can call God Father, by the guidance of the Spirit, but only those few that are so sure of their own sincerity, that, by reflecting upon it, they can ground an act of faith concerning

^d Rom. ix. 1. ^e Rom. viii. 15, 16, 17. Gal. iv. 6.
^f Eph. i. 13, 14.

concerning their own interest in Christ: no, surely. Therefore we may judge rather, that the Spirit worketh this in us, by giving us saving faith itself, by the direct act of which all true believers are enabled to trust assuredly on Christ for the enjoyment of the adoption of children, and all his salvation, according to the free promise of God; and to call God, Father, without reflecting on any good qualification in themselves: for the Spirit is received by the direct act of faith^s, and so he is the spirit of adoption, and comfort, to all that receive him. They that assert, that the Spirit witnesseth our adoption, only by assuring us of the sincerity of our faith, love, and other gracious qualifications, and by the reflex act of faith, do teach also commonly, that you must again try, whether the spirit thus witnessing, be the spirit of truth, or of delusion, by searching narrowly, whether our inward grace be sincere or counterfeit: so that hereby the testimony of the Spirit is rendered so hard to be discerned, that it standeth us in no stead; but all our assurance is made at last to depend on our own certain knowledge of our own sincerity. There are several other evidences to shew, that believers generally were persuaded of their salvation in the apostles times. They loved and waited for the coming of Christ to judge the world^h. They loved all the saints for the hope that was laid up for them in heavenⁱ. The Corinthians, that were very carnal, and but babes in Christ, were persuaded that they should judge

^s Gal. iii. 2.
i. 3, 4, 5.

^h 1 Cor. i. 7. ^z Tim. iv. 8.

ⁱ Col.

judge the world, and angels, and that their bodies were members of Christ, and the temples of the Holy Ghost ^k. The very first coming of the gospel to the Thessalonians was in the Holy Ghost, and much assurance; so that they received it in much affliction, with joy of the Holy Ghost; when as yet they had no considerable time to get assurance, by reflecting on their good qualifications ^l. Likewise, the believing Hebrews, when they were illuminated at their first conversion, took joyfully the spoiling of their goods, knowing that they had in heaven a better and an enduring substance: and this was their confidence, which they were not to cast off, because the just liveth by faith. And therefore it appeareth, that this confidence belongeth necessarily to justifying saving faith ^m.

Now, let those that alledge the examples or experiences of many modern Christians to disprove all that I have asserted, consider well whether these are fit to be laid in the balance against all the scripture examples and experiences that I have produced out of the Old and New Testament. I confess that assurance of salvation is more rarely professed by Christians in these times, than formerly; and we may thank some teachers for it, that have deserted the doctrine of former Protestants in this point, and vented against it several errors, such as have been already named; and now would take advantage to confirm the truth of their doctrines from those doubtings in Christians, that have been chiefly occasioned by

^k 1 Cor. vi. 2, 3, 15, 19. ^l 1 Thess. i. 5, 6. ^m Heb. x. 32, 34, 35, 38.

by it. But, however, the nature of saving faith is still the same. And I assert, that, in these days as well as formerly, it always hath in it some assurance of salvation by Christ, which doth and will appear, at least in resisting and condemning all doubtings and praying against them, and endeavouring to trust assuredly, and to call God, Father; except, in extraordinary desertions, by which our case must not be tried. We are not to trust the judgment of many concerning themselves. They will judge falsely, that they have no assurance at all, because they know not yet, by marks and signs, that they are in a state of grace already, or because they think that there is no assurance when there are many doubtings, and because it is so weak and so much oppressed with doubting, that it can hardly be discerned as life in a fainting fit. But, if their judgments be better informed, they may be brought to discern some assurance in themselves. We are also to take heed of mistaking those for true believers that are not so, and of judging this point by their experiences; which is a vulgar error. The blind charity of some moveth them to take all for true believers who are full of doubts and troubles concerning their salvation, tho' it may be they only are convinced of sin, and brought to some zeal of God, that is not according to the knowledge of the way of salvation by Christ: and they think it duty to comfort such ignorant persons, by persuading them, that their state is good, and their faith right, though they have no assurance of salvation. Thus they are brought to judge falsely concerning the nature of faith, out of their blind charity to such as are yet in ignorance

norance and unbelief; and, instead of comforting such, they rather take the direct way to harden them in their natural state, and to divert them from seeking consolation by saving faith in Christ, and to ruin their souls for ever.

Fifthly, The chief office of this faith, in its direct saving act, is, to receive Christ and his salvation actually into our hearts, as hath been proved; which office cannot be rationally performed, except we do, in some measure, persuade our hearts and assure ourselves of the enjoyment of him. As the body receiveth things into itself by the hands and mouth; so the soul receiveth these things to itself, and layeth actual hold of them, by the faculty of the will, making choice of them and embracing them in a way of present enjoyment and possession, as it doth by the faculty of the understanding see and apprehend them. Thus the soul receiveth comfort from outward things; as a righteous person cannot receive inward comfort from outward things, as from worldly estate, wife, husband, friends, &c. except he chuse them as good, and account them his own by a right and title. This is the only rational way whereby the soul can actively lay hold on Christ, and take actual possession of him, and his salvation, as he is freely offered and promised to us in the gospel, by the grace of faith, which God hath appointed to be our great instrument for the receiving of him, and closing with him. If we do not make choice of Christ as our only salvation and happiness, or if we be altogether in a state of suspense, and doubting whether God will be pleased to give Christ to us or no, it is evident, that our souls are quite loose from Christ, and have no holdfast or enjoyment

joyment of him. They do not so much as pretend to any actual receiving or laying hold or chusing of him, neither are they fully satisfied that it is lawful for them so to do ; but rather they are yet to seek, whether they have any good ground and right to lay hold on him or no. Let any rational man judge, whether the soul doth, or can put forth any sufficient act for the reception and enjoyment of Christ as its saviour, head, or husband, while it is yet in doubt, whether it be the will of Christ to be joined with it in such a near relation ? Can a woman honestly receive any one as her husband, without being assured that he is fully willing to be her husband ? The same may be said concerning the several parts of Christ's salvation, which are to be received by faith. It is evident, that we do not aright, receive the benefit of remission of sins, for the purging of our consciences from that guilt that lieth upon them, unless we have an assured persuasion of God's forgiving them. We do not actually receive into our hearts our reconciliation with God, and adoption of children, and the title to an everlasting inheritance, until we can assure ourselves, that God is graciously pleased to be our God and Father, and take us to be his children and heirs. We do not actually receive any sufficient strength to encourage our hearts to holiness in all difficulties, until we can stedfastly believe, that God is with us, and will not fail nor forsake us.

Hence then we may firmly conclude, that whoso seeketh to be saved by faith, and doth not seek to have assurance or confidence of his own salvation, doth but deceive himself, and delude his soul with a mere fancy instead of saving faith, and doth, in effect, seek

to be saved in his corrupt natural state, without receiving and laying actual hold of the Lord Jesus Christ and his salvation.

Sixthly, It is also a great and necessary office of saving faith, to purify the heart, and to enable us to live and walk in the practice of all holy duties, by the grace of Christ, and by Christ himself living in us, as hath been shewed before; which office faith is not able to perform, except some assurance of our own interest in Christ and his salvation be comprehended in the nature of it. If we would live to God, not ourselves, but by Christ living in us, according to Paul's example, we must be able to assure ourselves, as he did, "*Christ loved me, and gave himself for me*." We are taught, that, "*if we live in the Spirit, we should walk in the Spirit*." It would be high presumption if we should endeavour to walk above our natural strength and power by the Spirit, before we have made sure of our living by the Spirit. I have shewed, that we cannot make use of the comfortable benefits of the saving grace of Christ, whereby the gospel doth engage and encourage us to a holy practice, except we have some confidence of our own interest in those saving benefits. If we do not assuredly believe, that we are dead to sin, and alive to God through Christ, and risen with Christ, and not under the law, but under grace, and members of Christ's body, the temple of his Spirit, the dear children of God, it would be hypocrisy to serve God upon the account of such privileges, as if we reckoned ourselves to be partakers of them. He that thinks he should doubt of his salvation, is not a fit

• Gal. ii. 20. • Gal. v. 25.

O

dis-

disciple for this manner of doctrine ; and he may reply to the preachers of the gospel, If you would bring me to holiness, you must make use of other more effectual arguments ; for I cannot practise upon these principles, because I have not faith enough to believe, that I have any interest in them. Some arguments taken from the justice and wrath of God against sinners, and his mercy towards those that perform the condition of sincere obedience, would work more powerfully upon me. O what a miserable worthless kind of saving faith is this, that cannot fit a believer to practise, in a gospel-manner, upon the most pure and powerful principles of grace, but rather leaveth him to work upon legal principles, which can never bring him to serve God acceptably out of love ! And as such a faith faileth wholly in the right manner of obeying upon gospel-principles, so it faileth also in the very matter of some great duties, which are of such a nature, that they include assurance of God's love in the right performance of them ; such are those great duties of peace with God, rejoicing in the Lord always, hope that maketh not ashamed, owning the Lord as our God and our Saviour, praying to him as our Father in heaven, offering up body and soul as an acceptable sacrifice to him, casting all our cares of body and soul upon him, contentment and hearty thanksgiving in every condition, making our boast in the Lord, triumphing in his praise, rejoicing in tribulation, putting on Christ in our baptism, receiving Christ's body as broken for us and his blood as shed for us in the Lord's supper, committing our souls willingly to God as our Redeemer whenever he shall be pleased

pleased to call for us, loving Christ's second appearance, and looking for it as that blessed hope. When we fall into any sudden doubting whether we are in a state of grace already; when we are called to any present undertaking, as to partake of the Lord's supper, or any duty that requires assurance to the right performance of it, we must relieve ourselves by trusting confidently in Christ for the present gift of his salvation, or else we shall be driven to omit the duty, or not to perform it rightly or sincerely. Can we judge ourselves already in a state of grace by the reflex act of faith, if we do not find, that we perform these duties, at least several of them, sincerely; or if we do not find, that we have such a holy faith as doth enable or incline us to the performance of them? And can we be thus enabled and inclined by any faith that is without some true assurance of our salvation? Therefore I conclude, that we must necessarily have some assurance of our salvation in the direct act of faith, whereby we are justified, sanctified, and saved, before we can, upon any good ground, assure ourselves, that we are already in a state of salvation, by that which they call the reflex act. Give me such a saving faith as will produce such fruits as these. No other faith will work by love, and therefore will not avail to salvation in Christ^p. The apostle James putteth thee upon shewing thy faith by thy works^q. And, in this trial, this faith of assurance cometh off with high praise and honour. When God called his people to

O 2

work

^p Gal. v. 6.^q James ii. 18.

work outward miracles by it, all things have been possible to them ; and it hath frequently brought forth such works of righteousness, as may be deservedly esteemed great spiritual miracles. From hence hath proceeded that heroic fortitude of the people of God, whereby their absolute obedience to God hath shined forth in doing and suffering those great things which are recorded in the holy scriptures, and in the histories of the church. And, if we be ever called to the fiery trial, as protestants formerly were, we shall find their doctrine of assurance will encourage us in suffering for the sake of Christ.

Seventhly, The contrary doctrine, which excludeth assurance out of the nature of saving faith, bringeth forth many evil fruits. It tendeth to bereave our souls of all assurance of our salvation, and solid comfort, which is the life of religion, by placing them after sincere universal obedience ; whereas, if we have them not first, we can never attain to this obedience, nor to any assurance that dependeth on it, as hath been proved. And this, as far as it prevails, makes us subject to continual doubtings concerning our salvation, and to tormenting fears of wrath, which casteth out true love to God, and can produce no better than slavish hypocritical service. It is one of the principal pillars whereby manifold superstitions in popery are supported as their monkish orders, their satisfaction for sin by works of penance, bodily macerations, whippings, pilgrimages, indulgences, trusting on the merits of saints, &c. When once men have lost the knowledge of the right way to assure themselves of salvation,

tion, they will catch at any straw, to avoid drowning in the gulph of despair.

This is no way to administer any solid comfort to the wounded spirits of those that see themselves void of all holiness, under the wrath and curse of God, dead in sin, not able so much as to think a good thought. You do but increase their terror and anguish, if you tell them, they must first get faith and obedience, and, when they find they have done that, they may persuade themselves, that God will receive them into his grace and favour. Alas ! they know that they cannot believe nor obey, except God prevent them with his grace and favour. And what if they be even at the point of death, struggling with death's pangs, so that they have no time or leisure to get good qualifications, and examine the goodness of them. You must have a more speedy way to comfort such, by discovering to them the free promises of salvation to the worst of sinners by faith in Christ, and by exhorting them to apply those promises, and trust on Christ confidently for remission of sins, holiness, and glory ; assuring them also, that God will help them to believe sincerely on Christ, if they desire it with all their hearts ; and that it is their duty to believe, because God commands it.

Several other evils are occasioned by the same doctrine. Men are unwilling to know the worst of themselves, and prone to think their qualifications better than they are, that they may avoid despair. Others please and content themselves without any assurance of their interest in Christ, because they think that is not necessary to salvation, and that but few attain to it : and in this they shew little love

to Christ, or to their own souls. Some foster doubtings of salvation as signs of humility, tho' they will hypocritically complain of them. Many mispend their time in poring upon their own hearts, to find out some evidence of their interest in Christ, when they should rather be employed in receiving Christ, and walking in him, by a confident faith.

Some are troubled with doubts, whether they should call God Father, and what apprehensions they should have of him in prayer, and are offended at ministers, that, in their public prayers, use any expressions that the people cannot join in; as when they do own God as their God and Father, and Christ as their Saviour; and, upon the same account, they are offended at the public singing of many of David's psalms, and avoid partaking of the Lord's supper, because they are not satisfied about their interest in Christ.

Though true believers have some assurance of salvation in saving faith itself, yet it is much weakened in many by this contrary doctrine, and assaulted with many doubtings; and then other good qualifications must needs be low and weak together with it, and so obscure, that it is very hard to discern them. How hard a thing then will it be for true believers to assure themselves, by the certain knowledge of their own sincerity, that they are in a state of grace already, which some say is the only assurance of faith? Some prescribe such marks and signs to distinguish sincerity from hypocrisy, that believers cannot sufficiently try themselves by them, except they have more knowledge and experience than ordinary.

Thus

Thus many believers walk heavily in the bitterness of their souls, conflicting with fears and doubtings all their days. And this is the cause that they have so little courage and fervency of spirit in the ways of God, and that they so much mind earthly things, and are so afraid of sufferings and death: and, if they get some assurance by the reflex act of faith, they often soon lose it again by sins and temptations. The way to avoid these evils, is, to get your assurance, and to maintain it, and renew it upon all occasions by the direct act of faith, by trusting assuredly on the name of the Lord, and staying yourself upon your God, when you walk in darkness, and see no light in any of your own qualifications*. I doubt not but the experience of many choice Christians will bear witness to this truth.

DIRECTION XI.

Endeavour diligently to perform the great work of believing on Christ, in a right manner, without any delay, and then also to continue and increase in your most holy faith; that so your enjoyment of Christ, union and fellowship with him, and all holiness by him, may be begun, continued, and increased in you.

EXPLICATION.

HAVING already discovered to you the powerful and effectual means of a holy practice, my remaining work is, to lead you to the actual exercise and improvement of them, for the immediate at-

O 4

tainment

* Isa. l. 10.

tainment of the end. And I think it may be clearly perceived by the foregoing directions, that faith in Christ is the duty with which a holy life is to begin, and by which the foundation of all other holy duties is laid in the soul. It is before sufficiently proved, that Christ himself, with all endowments necessary to enable us to a holy practice, is received actually into our hearts by faith. This is the uniting grace, whereby the spirit of God knitteth the knot of mystical marriage between Christ and us, and maketh us branches of that noble vine; members of that body, joined to that excellent head; living stones of the spiritual temple, built upon the precious living corner-stone, and sure foundation; partakers of the bread and drink that came down from heaven, and giveth life to the world. This is the grace whereby we pass from our corrupt natural state, to a new holy state in Christ, also from death in sin, to the life of righteousness, and whereby we are comforted, that so we may be established in every good word and work. If we put the question, *What must we do, that we may work the works of God?* Christ resolveth it, that we believe on him whom he hath sent*. He putteth us first upon the work of believing, which is the work of God by way of eminency, the work of works, because all other good works proceed from it.

The FIRST thing in the present direction, is, to put you upon the performance of this great work of believing on Christ, and to guide you therein.

* John vi. 28, 29.

therein. For you are to consider distinctly four things contained in it.

I. The *first* is, You are to make it your diligent endeavour to perform the great work of believing on Christ. Many make little conscience of this duty. It is not known by natural light, as many moral duties are, but only by supernatural revelation in the gospel, and it is foolishness to the natural man. These are sometimes terrified with apprehensions of other sins, and will examine themselves concerning them; and, it may be, will write them down, to help their memories and devotion. But the great sin of not believing in Christ, is seldom thought of in their self-examinations, or registered in the large catalogues of their sins. And even those who are convinced, that believing on Christ is a duty necessary to salvation, do neglect all diligent endeavours to perform it: either because they account, that it is a motion of the heart which may be easily performed at any time, without any labour or diligent endeavour; or, on the contrary, because they account it as difficult as all the works of the law, and utterly impossible for them to perform by their most diligent endeavours, except the Spirit of God work it in them by his mighty power; and that therefore it is in vain for them to work, until they feel this working of the Spirit in their hearts: or because they account it a duty so peculiar to the elect, that it would be presumption for them to endeavour the performance of it, until they know themselves to be elected to eternal life thro' Christ. I shall urge you to a diligent performance of this duty, notwithstanding all these impediments,

pediments, by the following consideration. It is worthy of our best endeavours, as appeareth by the preciousness, excellency, and necessity of it already discovered.

If the light of nature was not darkened in the matters of salvation, it would shew us, that we cannot of ourselves find out the way of salvation; and would condemn those that despise that revelation of the way of salvation that God hath given us in the gospel, declared in the holy scriptures. The great end of preaching the gospel, is for the obedience of faith^t; that so we may be brought to Christ, and all other obedience. Yea the great end of all revealed doctrines in the whole scripture, is, to *make us wise unto salvation by faith which is in Christ Jesus*^u. The end of the law given by Moses, was for *righteousness to every one that believeth*^w; and Christ was that end for righteousness. The moral law itself was revealed, in order to our salvation by believing on Christ: or else the knowledge of it had nothing availed fallen man, that was unable to perform it. Therefore they that slight the duty of believing, and account it foolishness, do thereby slight, despise and vilify the whole counsel of God revealed in the scripture. The law and the gospel, and Christ himself, are become of none effect to the salvation of such. The only fruit that such an one can attain to, by all the saving doctrines of the scripture, is only some hypocritical moral duties, and slavish performances, which will be as filthy rags in the sight of God in the great day. However many mind
not

^t Rom. i. 5.^u 2 Tim. iii. 15.^w Rom. x. 4.

not the sin of unbelief in their self-examinations, and write it not in their scrolls; yet let them know, that this is the most pernicious sin of all. All the sins in their scrolls would not prevail to their condemnation, yea they would not prevail in their conversation, were it not for their unbelief. This one sin prevailing, maketh it impossible for them to please God in any duty whatsoever^x. If you will not mind this one main sin now, God will at last mind you of it with a vengeance: for *he that believeth not on the Son, shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him*^y. *The Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven in flaming fire, taking vengeance on those that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ*^z.

2. Believing on Christ, is a work that will require diligent endeavour and labour for the performance of it. We must labour to enter into that rest, lest any man fall by unbelief^a. *We must shew diligence to the full assurance of hope to the end, that we may be followers of them who thro' faith and patience inherit the promises*^b. It is a work that requireth the exercise of might and power; and therefore we have need to be strengthened with might by the Spirit in the inward man, that Christ may dwell in our hearts by faith^c. I confess, it is easy, pleasant, and delicious in its own nature, because it is a motion of the heart, without any cumbersome bodily labour; and it is a taking Christ and his salvation as our own, which is very comfortable and delightful; and the soul is carried forth in this by love to Christ and its
own

^x Heb. xi. 6.^y John iii. 36.^z 2 Thess. i. 7.^a Heb. iv. 11.^b Heb. vi. 11, 12.^c Eph. iii. 16, 17.

own happiness, which is an affection that maketh even hard works easy and pleasant: yet it is made difficult to us, by reason of the opposition that it meets with from our own inward corruptions, and from satan's temptations. It is no easy matter to receive Christ as our happiness, and free salvation, with true confidence and lively affection, when the guilt of sin lieth heavily upon the conscience, and the wrath of God is manifested by the word and terrible judgments; especially when we have been long accustomed to seek salvation by the procurement of our own works, and to account the way of salvation by free grace, foolish and pernicious; when our lusts incline us strongly to the things of the flesh and the world; when satan doth his utmost, by his own suggestions, and by false teachers, and by worldly allurements and terrors, to hinder the sincere performance of this duty. Many works that are easy in their own nature, prove difficult for us to perform in our circumstances. To forgive our enemies, and to love them as ourselves, is but a motion of the mind, easy to be performed in its own nature; and yet many that are convinced of their duty, find it a hard matter to bring their hearts to the performance of it. It is but a motion of the mind, to cast our care upon God for worldly things; and rich men may think they can do it easily: but poor men that have great families, find it a hard matter. That easy comfortable duty which Moses exhorteth the Israelites to, when Pharaoh, with his chariots and horsemen, overtook them at the red sea, *Fear ye not, stand still, and see the salvation of*
the

the Lord, which he will shew to you to day^d, was not easily performed. The very easiness of some duties makes their performance difficult; as Naaman the Syrian was hardly brought to wash and be clean, because he thought it to be too slight and easy a remedy for the cure of his leprosy^e. Even in this very case, people are offended at the duty of believing on Christ, as too slight and easy a remedy to cure the leprosy of the soul; they would have some harder thing enjoined them, to the attainment of so great an end as this everlasting salvation. The performance of all the moral law is not accounted work enough for this end^f. However easy the work of believing seemeth to many; yet common experience hath shewed, that men are more easily brought to the most burdensome, unreasonable, and inhuman observations: as the Jews and christian Galatians were more easily brought to take upon their necks the yoke of Moses's law, which none were able to bear^g. The heathens were more easily brought to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire to their gods^h. The papists are brought more easily to their vows of chastity, and poverty, and obedience to the most rigorous rules of monastic discipline; to macerate and torture their bodies with fastings, scourgings, and pilgrimages; and to bear all the excessive tyranny of the papal hierarchy, in a multitude of burdensome, superstitious, and ridiculous devotions. They that slight the work of faith for its easiness, shew, that they were never yet made sensible of innumerable sins, and the terrible

^d Exod. xiv. 13. ^e 2 Kings v. 12, 13. ^f Matt. xix. 17, 20. ^g Acts xv. 10. ^h Deut. xii. 31.

rible curse of the law, and wrath of God that they lie under; and of the darkness and vanity of their minds, the corruption and hardness of their hearts, and their bondage under the power of sin and satan; and have not been truly humbled; without which they cannot believe in a right manner. Many sound believers have found by experience, that it hath been a very hard matter to bring their hearts to the duty of believing; it hath cost them vigorous struggles and sharp conflicts with their own corruptions, and satan's temptations. It is so difficult a work, that we cannot perform it without the mighty working of the Spirit of God in our hearts, who only can make it to be absolutely easy to us, and doth make it easy, or suffer it to be difficult, according as he is pleased to communicate his grace in various degrees unto our souls.

3. Though we cannot possibly perform this great work in a right manner, until the Spirit of God work faith in our hearts by his mighty power; yet it is necessary that we should endeavour it; and that before we can find the Spirit of God working faith effectually in us, or giving strength to believe. We can perform no holy duty acceptably, except the Spirit of God work it in us; and yet we are not hereby excused from working ourselves, but we are the rather stirred up to the greater diligence: *Work out your salvation with fear and trembling; for it is God that worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure*ⁱ. The way whereby the Spirit works faith in the elect, is, by stirring them up to endeavour

your

ⁱ Phil. ii. 12, 13.

your to believe. And this is a way suitable to the means that the Spirit useth; *i. e.* the exhortations, commands, and invitations of the gospel; which would be of no force, if we were not to obey them, until we find faith already wrought in us. Neither can we possibly find, that the Spirit of God doth effectually work faith, or give strength to believe, until we act it; for which end, all inward graces, as well as all other inward habits, are discerned by their acts, as seed in the ground by its springing. We cannot see any such thing as love to God or man in our hearts before we act it. Children know not their ability to stand upon their feet, until they have made trial, by endeavouring so to do: so we know not our spiritual strength, until we have learned by experience from the use and exercise of it. Neither can we know, or assure ourselves absolutely, that the Spirit of God will give us strength to believe, before we act faith; for such a knowledge and assurance, if it be right, is saving faith itself in part; and whosoever trusteth on Christ assuredly for strength to believe by his Spirit, doth, in effect, trust on Christ for his own salvation, which is inseparably joined with the grace of saving faith. Though the Spirit worketh our duties in us by faith; yet he worketh faith in us immediately by hearing, knowing, and understanding the word: *Faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God*^k. And in the word he maketh no absolute promise or declaration, that he will work faith in this or that unbelieving heart, or that he will give strength

^k Rom. x. 17.

strength to believe to any one in particular, or begin the work of believing in Christ; for faith itself is the first grace whereby we have a particular interest in any saving promise. It is a thing hidden in the secret council and purpose of God concerning us, whether he will give us his Spirit and saving faith, until our election be discovered by our believing actually. Therefore, as soon as we know the duty of believing, we are to apply ourselves immediately to the vigorous performance of the duty, and, in so doing, we shall find that the Spirit of Christ hath strengthened us to believe, though we know not certainly, that he will do it before hand. The Spirit cometh indiscernibly upon the elect, to work faith within them; like the wind that bloweth where it lists, and none knoweth whence it cometh, and whither it goeth, but only we hear the sound of it, and thereby know it when it is past and gone¹. We must therefore begin the work, before we know, that the Spirit doth or will work in us savingly: and we shall be willing to set upon the work if we be Christ's people; for *Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power*^m. It is enough that God discovereth to us before-hand in the gospel what faith is, and the ground we have to believe on Christ for our own salvation; and that God requireth this duty of us, and will help us in the performance of it, if we apply ourselves heartily thereunto: *Fear not, I command thee to be strong, and of good courage*ⁿ. *Arise and be doing, and the Lord will be with thee*^o. Therefore whoso receiveth this gospel-discovery as
the

¹ John iii. 8. ^m Psal. cx. 3. ⁿ Josh. i. 9. ^o 1 Chron. xxii. 16.

the word of God in hearty love, is taught by the Spirit, and will certainly come to Christ by believing^p. Every one that receiveth it not, despiseth God, maketh him a liar, and deserveth justly to perish for his unbelief.

4. Though the Spirit worketh saving faith only in the elect, and others believe not, because they are not of Christ's sheep^q; and on that account it is called the *faith of God's elect*^r; yet all that hear the gospel, are obliged to the duty of believing, as well as to all the duties of the moral law, and that besore they know their own particular election: and they are liable to condemnation for unbelief, as well as for any other sin: *He that believeth not, is condemned already, because he hath not believed on the name of the only begotten Son of God*^s. The Apostle Paul sheweth, that the elect Israelites obtained salvation, and the rest that were not elected, were blinded; and yet even these were broken off from the good olive-tree, because of their unbelief^t. We cannot have a certain knowledge of our election to eternal life before we do believe; it is a thing hidden in the unsearchable counsel of God, until it be manifest by our effectual calling and believing on Christ. The apostle knew the election of the Thessalonians, by finding the evidence of their faith, that the gospel came to them, not in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance; and that they had received the word in much affliction, with joy in the Holy Ghost^u. We are to see our calling,

P

if

^p John vi. 45.^q John x. 26.^r Tit. i. 1.^s John iii. 18.^t Rom. xi. 7, 20.^u 1 Thess. i. 4, 5, 6.

if we would find out, that God hath chosen us^{*}, Therefore we must believe on Christ before we know our election, or else we shall never know it, and shall never believe. And it is no presumption for us to trust confidently on Christ for everlasting life, before we have any good evidence of our election; because God, that cannot lie, hath made a general promise, *That whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed*, without making the least difference among them that perform this duty^{*}. The promise is as firm, and sure to be fulfilled, as any of God's decrees and purposes; and therefore it is a good and sufficient ground for our confidence. It is certain, that all that the Father hath given to Christ by the decree of eternal election, shall come to Christ: and it is as really certain, that Christ will in no wise cast out any that cometh to him, whosoever he be, And we need not fear that we shall infringe God's decree of election, by believing on Christ confidently for our salvation, before we know what God hath decreed concerning us; for, if we believe, we shall at last be found among the number of the elect; and, if we refuse to believe, we shall thereby willfully sort ourselves among the reprobates, that stumble at the word, being disobedient, *whereunto also they are appointed*^z. I shall add further, that tho' we have no evidence of our particular election before we believe; yet we are to trust on Christ assuredly, to make it evident to us, by giving us that salvation which is the peculiar portion of the elect only. All spiritual saving blessings, wherewith God
blesseth

^{*} 1 Cor. i. 26, 27. ^z Rom. x. 11, 12. ^y John vi. 37.
^z 1 Pet. ii. 8.

blesteth his people in Christ, are the peculiar portion of them whom *God hath chosen in Christ before the foundation of the world*^a; yet we must necessarily trust on Christ for those saving blessings, or have none at all. We are to pray in faith, nothing doubting, that God will remember us with the favour that he beareth to his people; that we may see the good of his chosen, and glory with his inheritance^b. Therefore we are to trust assuredly on God, that he will deal with us as his chosen people. Thus it appeareth, that it is not presumption, but your bounden duty, to apply yourselves to the great work of believing on Christ for salvation, without questioning at all beforehand, whether you are elected or no: *Secret things belong to God, but those things that are revealed, belong unto us, that we may do them*^c.

The SECOND thing directed to is, that you should endeavour for a right manner of performing this duty. This is a point of great concernment, because the want of it will render your faith ineffectual to sanctification and salvation. The great duty of love, which is the end of the law, and the principal fruit of sanctification, must flow from faith unfeigned^d. There is a feigned faith, that doth not really receive Christ into the heart, and will not produce love, or any true obedience; such as Simon Magus had^e; for notwithstanding his faith, he was in the *gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquity*; and such as those Jews had, to whom Christ would not commit himself, who did not confess him,

P 2

lest

^a Eph. i. 3, 4. ^b Psal. cvi. 4, 5. ^c Deut. xxix. 29.
^d 1 Tim. i. 5. ^e Acts viii. 13, 23.

lest they should be put out of the synagogue^f; and such as the apostle James speaks of, “What doth
 “it profit you, my brethren, if a man say he hath
 “faith, and have not works? Can *that* faith save
 “him? The devils also believe and tremble^g. Take
 heed therefore, lest you deceive your souls with a
 counterfeit faith, instead of the precious faith of
 God’s elect. The way to distinguish the one from
 the other is, by considering well what is the right
 manner of that believing which is effectual to salva-
 tion. Hypocrites may perform the same works for
 the matter, with true saints; but they are defective
 in the manner of performance, wherein the excellency
 of the work doth chiefly consist. One great reason
 why many seek to enter in at the strait gate, and
 are not able^h, is, because they are ignorant and de-
 fective in the right manner of acting this faith where-
 by they are to enter. Now I confess, that God
 only is able to guide us effectually in the right way
 of believing. And we have this great consolation,
 when we see our own folly and proneness to mis-
 take our way, that, if we heartily desire and en-
 deavour to believe on Christ aright, we may con-
 fidently trust on Christ to guide us. God hath
 promised, that the way-faring men, tho’ fools, shall
 not err in the way of holiness; and that he will
 teach sinners in the way; “The meek will he
 “guide in judgment, and the meek will he teach
 “his wayⁱ; and he commandeth them that lack
 wisdom, *to ask it of God in faith, nothing doubting^k*.

But,

^f John ii. 23. & xii. 42. ^g James ii. 14, 19. ^h Luke
 xiii. 24. ⁱ Psal. xxv. 8, 9. ^k Jam. i. 5, 6.

But, however, we are to know, that God guideth us only according to the rule of his word: and we must endeavour to learn the right way of believing out of the word, or else we are not able so much as to trust rightly on God for guidance and direction in this great work. To help you herein, I have given you before, in this treatise, a description of saving faith; and have shewed, that it containeth two acts in it; the one is *believing the truth of the gospel*; the other is, *believing on Christ, as revealed and freely promised to us in the gospel, for all his salvation*. Now, your great endeavour must be, to perform both these acts in a right manner; as I shall shew concerning each of them in particular.

• In the *first* place, you are highly concerned to endeavour for a right belief of the truth of the gospel of Christ; that so you may be well furnished, disposed, and encouraged to believe on Christ as revealed and promised in the gospel. Hereby you are to remove all discomfortable thoughts and objections of Satan and your own conscience, and to overcome all corrupt inclinations that hinder a chearful embracing of Christ and his salvation. It is found by experience, that, when any fail in the second act of faith, the reason of the failing is commonly some defect in this first act. There is some false imagination or other in them, contrary to the belief of the truth of the gospel; which is a strong hold of sin and satan that must be pulled down, before they can receive Christ into their hearts by believing on him. If they knew the name of Christ as he is discovered in the gospel, and judged aright of the truth and excellency of it, they would not fail to put their trust in him. And we

are in great danger of entertaining such false imaginations, and to account many truths of the gospel strange paradoxes, yea foolish and pernicious, because of our ignorance, self conceitedness, guilty consciences, corrupt affections, and manifold errors wherewith our judgments are prepossessed in matters of salvation; and because satan laboureth to beguile us, as he did Eve, through his subtilty, to corrupt our minds from the simplicity of the gospel that is in Christ¹. I shall therefore give you some particular instructions, that are of greatest moment, to prevent such defects as we are most liable to in the first act of our faith.

1. You must believe with a *full persuasion*, that you are a *child of wrath by nature*, as well as others; fallen from God by the sin of the first Adam: dead in trespasses and sins; subject to the curse of the law of God, and to the power of satan, and to insupportable misery to all eternity; and that you cannot possibly procure your reconciliation with God, or any spiritual life and strength to do any good work, by any endeavouring to get salvation according to the terms of the legal covenant; and that you cannot find any way to escape out of this sinful and miserable condition by your own reason and understanding, without supernatural revelation, nor be freed from it, except by that infinite power that raiseth the dead. We must not be afraid, as some are, to know our own vileness and sinfulness, neither must we be willing to think ourselves better than we are; but must be heartily desirous and glad

10

to know the worst of our own condition ; yea, when we have found out the worst that we can of ourselves, we must be willing to believe, that our hearts are deceitful, and desperately wicked, beyond all that we can know and find out^m. This is all necessary to work in us true humiliation, self-despair, and self-loathing, that we may highly esteem, and earnestly seek the salvation of Christ, as the one thing necessary. It maketh us sick of sin, and sensible of our need of the great Physician, and willing to be ordered according to any of his prescriptions, whatsoever we suffer, rather than to follow our own wisdomⁿ. It was for want of this humiliation that the scribes and Pharisees were not so forward to enter into the kingdom of heaven as the publicans and harlots^o.

2. You are to believe assuredly, that there is no way to be saved, without receiving *all the saving benefits of Christ*, his Spirit as well as his merits, sanctification as well as remission of sins by faith. It is the ruin of many souls, that they trust on Christ for remission of sins, without any regard to holiness ; whereas these two benefits are inseparably joined in Christ, so that none are freed from condemnation by Christ, but those that are enabled to walk holily, that is, not after the flesh, but after the Spirit^p. It is also the ruin of souls, to seek only remission of sins by faith in Christ, and holiness by our endeavours, according to the terms of the law ; whereas we can never live to God in holiness, except

P 4

cept

^m Jer. xvii. 9.
^p Rom. viii. 1.

ⁿ Matt. ix. 12.

^o Matt. xxi. 31

cept we be dead to the law, and live only by Christ living in us by faith. That faith which receiveth not holiness as well as remission of sins from Christ, will never sanctify us; and therefore it will never bring us to heavenly glory ⁹.

3. You are to be fully persuaded of the *all-sufficiency of Christ for the salvation of yourself, and of all that believe on him*; that *his blood cleanseth from all sin* ¹. Though our sins be never so great and horrible, and continued in never so long, yet he is able to deliver us from the body of death, and mortify our corruptions, be they never so strong. We find in scripture, that abominable wicked persons have been saved by him, idolaters, adulterers, effeminate, covetous, drunkards, extortioners, &c. ². such as have sinned against the light of nature as the heathen, and the light of scripture as the Jews; such as have denied Christ as Peter, and persecuted and blasphemed him as Paul. Many that have fallen into great sins are ruined for ever, because they do not account the grace of Christ sufficient for their pardon and sanctification: when they think they are gone, and past all hope of recovery, that their sins are upon them, and they pine away in them, how shall they live ³? This despair works secretly in many souls, without much trouble and horror, and maketh them careless of their souls and true religion. The devil fills some with horrid, filthy, blasphemous thoughts, on purpose that they may think their sins too great to be forgiven; though
commonly

⁹ Heb. xii. 14.

¹ John i. 7.

² 1 Cor. vi. 9. 10.

³ Ezek. xxxiii. 20.

commonly such thoughts are the least of the sins of those that are pestered with them, and rather the devil's sin than theirs, because they are hurried into them fore against their wills : but, if their hearts be somewhat polluted with them, Christ testifieth, " that
" all manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven;
" except the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost ". And as for those that are guilty of blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, the reason why they are never forgiven, is not because of any want of sufficiency in the blood of Christ, or in the pardoning mercy of God ; but because they never repent of that sin, and never seek to God for mercy thro' Christ, but continue obstinate until death ; for the scripture testifieth, that it is impossible to renew them again unto repentance ^w. So that the merits of Christ are sufficient for all that seek to him for mercy by believing. There are others that despair of ever getting any victory over their lusts, because they have formerly made many vows and resolutions, and have used many vigorous endeavours against them in vain. Such are to persuade themselves, that the grace of Christ is sufficient for them, when all other means have failed ; as the woman that had the issue of blood, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse by any remedies that physicians could prescribe, yet persuaded herself, that, if she might but touch the cloaths of Christ, she would be whole ^x. Those that despair by reason of the greatness of their guilt and corruption, do greatly dishonour and undervalue the grace of God, his infinite mercy, and the infinite

^w Matt. xii. 31. ^y Heb. vi. 5, 6. ^x Mark v. 25—28.

finite merits of Christ's blood, and power of his Spirit, and deserve to perish with Cain and Judas. Abundance of people that give up themselves to all licentiousness in this wicked generation, lie under secret despair; which maketh them so desperate in swearing, blaspheming, whoring, drunkenness, and all manner of wickedness. How horrid and heinous soever our sins and corruptions have been, we should learn to account them a small matter in comparison to the grace of Christ, who is God as well as man, and offered himself, by the eternal Spirit, as a sacrifice of an infinite value, for our salvation; and can create us anew as easily as he created the world, by a word speaking.

4. You are to be fully persuaded of the truth of *the general free promise in your own particular case*, that if you believe on Christ sincerely, you shall have everlasting life, as well as any other in the world, without performing any condition of works to procure an interest in Christ: for the promise is universal, "Whosoever believeth on him, shall not be ashamed," without any exception. And, if God exclude you not, you must not exclude yourselves; but rather conclude peremptorily, that, how vile, wicked and unworthy soever you be, yet, if you come, you shall be accepted as well as any other in the world. You are to believe that great article of the creed, the remission of sins, in your own case, when you are principally concerned, or else it will little profit you, to believe it in the case of others. This is that which hinders many broken wounded

wounded Spirits from coming to the great Physician, when they are convinced of the abominable filthiness of their hearts, that they are dead in sin, without the least spark of true grace and holiness in them. They think that it is in vain for such as they are, to trust on Christ for salvation; and that Christ will never save such as they are. Why so? they can be but lost creatures at worst; and Christ came to seek and save those that are lost. If they who are dead in sin, cannot be saved, then all must despair and perish; for none have any spiritual life, until they receive it by believing on Christ. Some think themselves to be worse than any others, and that none have such wicked hearts as they; and tho' others be accepted, yet they shall be rejected. But they should know, that Christ came to save the chief of sinners²; and that the design of God is, to shew the exceeding riches of his grace in our salvation³; which is most glorified by pardoning the greatest sinners. And it is but our ignorance, to think ourselves like no body: for all others, as well as we, are naturally dead in trespasses and sins; their mind is enmity to God, and is not subject to his law, nor indeed can be^b; and every imagination of the thoughts of their hearts is only evil, and continually so^c, they have all the same corrupt fountain of all abominations in their hearts, though they may have exceeded many others in several actual sins. Others think that they have out-stayed their time, and therefore now they should find no place

² 1 Tim. i. 15.
^c Gen. vi. 5.

^a Eph. ii. 7.

^b Rom. viii. 7.

place for repentance, tho' they should seek it carefully with tears ^d. But, behold now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation ^e, even as long as God calleth upon you by the gospel. And although Esau was rejected, who sought rather the earthly than the spiritual blessings of the birthright; yet they shall not be rejected, that seek the enjoyment of Christ, and his salvation, as their only happiness. If you come unto Christ's vineyard at the eleventh hour of the day, you shall have your penny, as well as those that come early in the morning; because the reward is of grace, and not of merit ^f. And here you must be sure to believe stedfastly, that Christ and all his salvation is bestowed as a free-gift upon those that do not work to procure any right or title to him, or meetness or worthiness to receive him, but only believe on him that justifieth the ungodly ^g. If you put any condition of works or good qualifications between yourselves and Christ, it will be a partition-wall which you can never climb over.

5. You are to believe assuredly, that *it is the will of God you should believe in Christ*, and have eternal life by him, as well as any other; and that your believing is a duty very acceptable to God; and that he will help you, as well as any other, in this work, because he calleth and commandeth you, by the gospel, to believe in Christ. This maketh us to set chearfully upon the work of believing; as when Jesus commanded the blind man to be called, they

^d Heb. xii. 17. ^e 2 Cor. vi. 2. ^f Matt. xx. 9, 10.

^g Rom. iv. 5.

they said unto him, "be of good comfort, rise; he calleth thee ^h." A command of Christ made Peter to walk upon the water ⁱ. And here we are not to meddle with God's secret of predestination, or the purpose of his will to give the grace of faith to some rather than others; but only with his revealed will, in his gracious invitations, and commands, by which we are required to believe on Christ. This will of God is confirmed by his oath, "As I live, saith the Lord God, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but that the wicked turn from his way, and live: turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways; for why will ye die, O house of Israel ^k." Christ testifieth, that "he would often have gathered the children of Jerusalem, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and they would not ^l." And the apostle Paul testifieth, that God *will have all men to be saved* ^m, &c. You are to reject and abandon all thoughts that are contrary to this persuasion. What if few be saved? thy salvation will not make the number too great; for few will follow thee in the duty of believing. What if the wrath of God be revealed from heaven against thee in many terrible judgments, and the word and thine own conscience condemn thee, and Christ seems to reckon thee no better than a dog, as he did the woman of Canaan ⁿ? Thou art to make a good interpretation of all these things that the end of them is, to drive thee to Christ, as this was the end of the

^h Mark x. 49. ⁱ Matt. xiv. 29. ^k Ezek. xxxiii.
^l Matt. xxiii. 37. ^m 1 Tim. ii. 4. ⁿ Matt.
 xv. 26.

the curses of the law, and all the terrible dispensations of them°. If a prophet, or angel from heaven were sent of God, on purpose to declare, that the sentence of everlasting damnation is declared against thee; it would be thy duty to believe, that God sent him to give thee timely warning, for this very end, that thou mightest believe, and turn to God by faith and repentance. Jeremiah prophesied against the Jews, that God would pluck them up, pull them down, and destroy them for their sins; yet he himself taught them, “ if they “ turned from their evil ways, God would repent of “ the evil P.” Jonah preached nothing but certain destruction to Nineveh, to be executed upon them within forty days⁹; yet the intent of that terrible message was, that those heathenish people might escape destruction by repentance. The most absolute and peremptory denunciations of divine vengeance against us, while we are in this world, must be always understood with a secret reserve of salvation for us, upon our faith and repentance. And we are to account, that the reason why God doth so terribly denounce his judgments against us by his word, is that we may escape them, by flying for refuge to his free mercy in Christ. Take heed of fostering any thoughts, that God hath absolutely decreed to shew no saving mercy to you, or that you have already committed the unpardonable sin, or that it is in vain for you to attempt the work of believing, because God will not help you in it. If such thoughts prevail in your hearts they will do you more hurt than

• Rom. x. 4. P Jer. xviii. 7, 8, 11. ⁹ Jonah iii. iv.

than the most blasphemous thoughts that terrify you, or any of the grossest abominations that ever you were guilty of; because they obstruct your believing on Christ for salvation. "The Spirit and the bride say, Come. Christ saith, whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely." Therefore we are to abandon all thoughts that hinder our coming to Christ, as very sinful and pernicious, arising in us from our own corruptions, and Satan's delusions, and utterly opposite to the mind of Christ, and teachings of the Spirit. And what ground can we have to entertain such unbelieving thoughts? Hath God made us of his privy council, that we should be able to know that God hath decreed us to damnation, before it be manifest by our final unbelief and impenitence? As for the unpardonable sin, it consisteth in renouncing the way of salvation by Christ with the whole heart, after we have attained to the knowledge of it, and are convinced of the truth of it by the gospel. It is the sin that the christian Hebrews would have been guilty of, if they had revolted from Christianity to the religion of the unbelieving Jews, that accounted Christ to be an impostor, and were most rancorous persecutors of him and his ways*. They that have committed that sin, continue implacable, malicious enemies to Christ and his ways to the end, without any repentance. Therefore, if you can but find, that you desire seriously to get an interest in Christ, and to be better Christians than you are; if you be troubled and grieved, that your hearts and lives are
so

* Rev. xxii. 17.

* Heb. vi. 4, 5.

so wicked, and that you want faith, love, and true obedience; yea, if your hearts be not maliciously bent to persecute the gospel, and prefer atheism, licentiousness, or any false religion before it; you have no cause to suspect yourselves to be guilty of this unpardonable sin.

6. Add to all these a *full persuasion of the incomparable glorious excellency of Christ, and of the way of salvation by him*. You are to esteem the enjoyment of Christ as the only salvation and true happiness, and such an happiness as hath in it unsearchable riches of glory, and will make our cup to run over with exceeding abundance of peace, and joy, and glory, to all eternity. We must account all things but loss, for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus our Lord ^t. Such a persuasion as this, will allure and incline your wills and affections to choose and embrace Christ as the chief good, and never to rest satisfied without the enjoyment of him; and to reject every thing that stands in competition with him, or the enjoyment of him. Christ is precious in the esteem of all true believers ^u. Their high esteem of his incomparable preciousness and excellency, induceth them to sell all, that they may buy this pearl of great price ^w. This maketh them to say, “ Lord, evermore give us this bread, that cometh down from heaven, and giveth life to the world. Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life ^x. Because of the favour of his good ointments, his name is as ointment poured out.”

^t Phil. iii. 8.

^u 1 Pet. ii. 7.

^w Matt. xiii. 46.

^x John vi. 33, 34, 68.

"ed forth; therefore do the virgins love him ¹." They are sick of love to him, because he is, in their eyes, the chiefest among ten thousand ². As the glory of God that appeared in the wonderful beauty of the temple, and in the wisdom and glory of Solomon, drew worshippers to God from the utmost parts of the earth; so the unparalleled excellence of Christ, which was prefigured by the glory of Solomon and the temple, doth more powerfully draw believers in the gospel days. The devil, who is the god of this world, knows how necessary it is for our salvation, to discern all the glory and excellency of Christ; and therefore, where the gospel is preached, he maketh it his great work to eclipse the glory of Christ in the ministry, and to blind the minds of the people, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ should shine unto them ³. One that is convinced of the truth of the gospel, may be averse to the embracing of it, until he see also the goodness of it, that Christ is altogether lovely and excellent.

I come now to the second principal act of faith, whereby Christ himself, and his Spirit, and all his saving benefits, are actually received into the heart; which is, believing on Christ, as revealed and freely promised to us in the gospel, for all his salvation. The Spirit of God doth habitually dispose and incline our hearts to a right performance of this act, by enabling us to perform the first act, according to the former instructions, by believing assuredly those great things of the gospel whereby we are delivered

Q

into

¹ Song i. 3.² Song v. 8, 10.³ 2 Cor. iv. 4.

into a form of doctrine^b; which we are to obey from our hearts, and to follow as our pattern, in the manner of our acting faith in Christ for salvation. Therefore I need only exhort you briefly to act your faith in Christ, according to that form and pattern, in which we have been already so largely instructed. You are to believe in Christ as alone sufficient, and all-sufficient for your happiness and salvation; despairing altogether of any attainment of happiness by your own wisdom, strength, works of righteousness, or any fleshly worldly confidences whatever. We must be as dead people to all other confidences, and account them to be loss for Christ, according to the example of the blessed apostle^c. We must not be grieved, that we have nothing to trust upon besides Christ for our salvation; but rather, we are to rejoice, that we need nothing else, and that we have a sure foundation to rely upon, incomparably better than any other that can be imagined. And we must resolve to cast the burden of our souls wholly on Christ, and to seek salvation no other way, whatsoever becomes of us. If the cripple lay not the whole weight of his body upon a strong staff, but part of it on a rotten one, he is like to receive a fall. If the swimmer will not commit his body wholly to the water to bear him up, but catch at weeds, or struggle to feel out ground, he may sink to the bottom. Christ will be all our salvation, or nothing. If we seek to be saved any other way, as the Galatians did by circumcision, Christ will profit us nothing^d.

You

^b Rom. vi. 17.^c Phil. iii. 3, 7, 8.^d Gal. v. 2.

You are also to receive Christ merely as a free gift given to the chief of sinners, resolving, that you will not perform any conditions to procure yourselves a right and title to him; but that you will come to him as a lost sinner, an ungodly creature, trusting on him that justifieth the ungodly; and that you will buy him without money; and without any price whatsoever*. Look not on your own faith or love, or any good qualifications in yourselves, as the ground of your trusting in Christ, but only to the free grace and loving kindness of God in Christ: "How excellent is thy loving kindness, O God! " therefore the children of men put their trust under " the shadow of thy wings †." For, if you make your faith, love, or good qualifications, to be your first and principal foundation, and you build Christ upon them instead of building all upon Christ, you invert the order of the gospel, and Christ will profit you nothing.

Another thing to be observed diligently, is, that you must come to Christ for a new holy heart and life, and all things necessary thereunto, as well as for deliverance from the wrath of God, and the torments of hell. You must also come to him with an ardent love and affection to him, and esteem him better than a thousand worlds, and the only excellent portion, loathing and abhorring yourself, as a vile, sinful, and miserable creature, and accounting all things dung in comparison of his excellency; that you may be able to say from the bottom of your heart, " Whom have I in heaven but thee?

Q 2

" and

* Rom. iv. 5. Isa. lv. 2.

† Psal. xxxvi. 7.

“ and there is none upon earth that I desire besides thee ^g.

Lastly, You must endeavour to draw near with full assurance of faith ^h; trusting on Christ confidently for your *own particular* salvation, upon the account of that general promise, that whosoever believeth on Christ shall not be ashamed ⁱ. You must check yourself for all doubtings, fears, staggerings, concerning your own salvation by Christ, saying with the psalmist, “ Why art thou cast down, O “ my soul,” &c. ^k.

The THIRD thing contained in this direction, is, the avoiding all delay in the performance of this great work of believing in Christ. Until we have performed it, we continue under the power of sin and Satan, and under the wrath of God; and there is nothing between hell and us, besides the breath of our nostrils. It is dangerous for Lot to linger in Sodom, lest fire and brimstone come down from heaven upon him. The man-slayer must fly with all haste to the city of refuge, lest the avenger of blood pursue him, while his heart is hot, and slay him ^l. We should make haste, and not delay, to keep God’s commandments ^m; and fly for refuge to the hope set before us ⁿ. And God commandeth us to fly thus by faith, without which it is impossible to please God in other duties. The work is of such a nature, that it may be formed as soon as you hear the gospel. “ As soon as they hear of me, they “ shall

^g Psal. lxxiii. 25.

^h Heb. x. 22.

ⁱ Rom. ix. 33.

^k Psal. xliii. 11.

^l Deut. xix. 5. 6.

^m Psal. cxix. 60.

ⁿ Heb. vi. 18.

“ shall obey me ^o. As soon as Zion travelled, she brought forth her children ^p.” We have many examples of those that received the word by faith at the first hearing of it. Three thousand were added to the church on the very same day wherein Peter first published the gospel in Jerusalem ^q. So many Jews and Gentiles were converted at the first hearing of the apostle Paul at Antioch ^r. The jailor and all his house believed, and were baptized, the same night wherein Paul first preached to them ^s. The gospel came at first to the Thessalonians, *not in word only, but in power, and in the holy Ghost* ^t. If God open the hearts of his people to attend diligently, they may be instructed in the knowledge of the gospel by one brief sermon sufficiently, to begin the practice of saving faith. And, when they know their duty, God requireth immediate performance, without allowing us the least respite in the state of unbelief. When satan cannot prevail with people to reject wholly the duty of believing, his next attempt for the ruin of their souls, is to prevail with them at least to delay and shift off the performance of it from time to time, by several false reasonings and imaginations which he putteth into their minds. The most ignorant and sensual are easily prevailed with to defer this duty, until they have taken their fill of the pleasures, profits, and honours of this world, and are summoned to prepare for another world, by infirmities, age, sickness; praying and hoping, that a large time of repentance will be granted unto them before they die. But such de-

Q 3

lays

^o Psal. xviii. 44. ^p Isa. lxvi. 8. ^q Acts ii. 41.
^r Acts xiii. 48. ^s Acts xvi. 33, 34. ^t 1 Thess. i. 5.

lays shew, that they are really unwilling to repent and believe, until they are forced by necessity; and that they prefer the pleasures, profits, and honours of the world, above God, and Christ, and their own souls. Thus they unfit themselves more and more for this great duty, by their customary walking in sin, and by mispending the precious time of their health and strength, which is most meet for the performance of this great work. They highly provoke God never to give them time or grace to repent hereafter. Others imagine, that, after they have heard the gospel of salvation by Christ, they may lawfully defer the believing it, until they have sufficiently examined the truth of some other different doctrine, or until God be pleased to afford them some other means, to assure them fully of the truth of the gospel. Thus they that are called *seekers* mispend the day of grace, *ever learning, but never coming to the knowledge of the truth*^u. But the truth of the gospel doth so clearly evidence itself by its own light, that, if people do not willingly shut their eyes, or blind themselves by their own pride, and love of their lusts, they would easily perceive, that it is the truth of God; because the image of his grace, mercy, power, justice, and holiness, appears manifestly engraven upon it. It is a sign people are proud, when they consent not to the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness^w. If they were humble, and sincerely inclined to do the will of God, they would know whether the doctrine be of God, or no^x; they would quickly

^u 2 Tim. iii. 7.^w 1 Tim. vi. 3.^x John vii. 17.

quickly be persuaded of the truth, by Moses and the prophets, Christ and the apostles, spoken to them in the scripture. And, if they will not hear them, neither will they be persuaded though one rose from the dead; or whatever other miracle be wrought, to confirm the divine authority of the gospel ^y. Another sort of people there are, that delay the great work of believing, to the ruin of their souls, resting in an attendance upon the outward means of grace and salvation, instead of any endeavours to receive Christ by faith, though they be convinced of the truth of the gospel. This they call waiting upon God at the doors of his grace and salvation, in the use of means appointed by him, and sitting under the droppings of the sanctuary. But let them know, that this is not the right waiting on God required in scripture. It is rather disobedience to God, and to the means of his appointment, who requires, that we should be *doers* of the word, and not *hearers* only, *deceiving ourselves* ^z, and that we should come in to the spiritual feast ^a; and not only stand at the door, or sit under the droppings of the house of God, lest Christ repute us no better than eve drop-pers. That holy waiting on the Lord commended to us in scripture, is ever accompanied with believing and hoping in the Lord, and dependeth thereon:

“ I had fainted, unless I had believed to see the goodness of the Lord in the land of the living. Wait on the Lord: be of good courage, and he shall strengthen thine heart: wait, I say, on the Lord ^b.

“ It is good that a man should both hope and quietly

Q 4

“ wait

^y Luke xvi. 31.^z Jam. i. 22.^a Luke xiv. 23.^b Psal. xxviii. 13, 14.

“ wait for the salvation of the Lord ^c.” What is it that these deluded ones wait for, before they perform the duty of believing? it is for more knowledge of the gospel. The way to increase thy knowledge, as well as any other talent, is, to make use of what thou hast received already. Believe heartily on Christ for all thy salvation, according to that little knowledge of the gospel which thou hast, and thou wilt have an interest in the promise of knowledge contained in the new covenant: “ They shall all know me, from the least to the greatest of them, saith the Lord ^d.” Is it for the appointed time of thy conversion that thou waitest? Then thou waitest, as those impotent folk that lay at the pool of Bethesda, waiting for the season when the angel would come down and move the water. Know then, that if thou enter into Christ now by faith, thou shalt find in him waters of life, and the Spirit moving them for the healing and quickening of thy soul. God hath appointed by his word, that it shall be thy duty to endeavour, that the present time should be the time of thy conversion: As the Holy Ghost saith, “ To day if thou wilt hear his voice, harden not thy heart ^e.” And thou shalt never know at what time God hath purposed, in his secret counsel, to give faith to thee, until thou dost actually believe. Dost thou wait for any manifestations or flowings in of God’s saving love to thy soul? Then the way to obtain it, is, to *believe*, that the God of hope may fill thee with all joy and peace in believing ^f. Thou hast sufficient manifestation

^c Lam. iii. 26.^d Jer. xxxi. 34.^e Heb. iii. 7, 8.^f Rom. xv. 13.

nifestation of God's love to thy soul, by the free promises of life and salvation by Christ. Do but trust on the name of the Lord, and stay upon thy God, when thou walkest in darkness, and seest no light of sensible comforts any other way; otherwise thou waitest for comfort in vain, and this shalt thou have at the Lord's hand, *thou shalt lie down in sorrow* *. Dost thou wait for any qualifications to prepare thee for the work of believing? If they be good and holy qualifications, thou canst not have them before faith; but they are either included in the nature of faith, or they are fruits of it: as hath been largely proved. If they be bad and sinful, it is strange that any should wait for them, and yet no more strange than true. Some foolishly wait to be terrified with a sense of God's wrath, and despairing thoughts; and these they call the pangs of the new birth; tho', in their own nature, they are rather the pangs of the spiritual death, and bring forth hatred to God, rather than holiness: and therefore we should strive to prevent them, by believing God's love in Christ, rather than to wait for them. It is true, God maketh these despairing thoughts, as well as other sins, work for good to them that are delivered from them by faith in Christ; they are moved thereby to hate sin, and to prize Christ the more, and the comforts of his gospel, and to lothe and abhor themselves: yet many are brought to Christ without them, by God's giving them the knowledge of their own sins and of Christ's salvation together. Several examples of these were above mentioned, who received the word with joy at the first hearing of it. And we must not desire or
wait

* Isa. l. 10, 11.

wait for any evil of sin, such as these despairing thoughts are, that good may come of it: neither should we expect to be worse before we be better, when we may and ought to be better *presently*, by believing on Christ.

The FOURTH thing in the direction, is, that we should continue and increase in the most holy faith. And, that we may, we must not think, that, when we have once attained the grace of saving faith, and thereby are begotten anew in Christ, our names are up in heaven, and therefore we may be careless: but, as long as we continue in this life, we must endeavour to continue in the faith, grounded and settled, not moved away from the hope of the gospel^h; and to hold the beginning of our confidence, and the rejoicing of hope, steadfast to the endⁱ; and build up ourselves in our most holy faith^k, abounding therein with thanksgiving^l. Though we receive Christ freely by faith; yet we are but babes in Christ^m. And we must not account, that we have already attained, or are already perfectⁿ; but we must strive to be more rooted and built up in him, until we come unto a *perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ*^o. If the new nature be really in us by regeneration, it will have an appetite to its own continuance and increase, until it come to perfection, as the new-born babe^p. And we are not only to receive Christ and a new holy nature by faith, but also to live and walk by it, and to resist the devil, and to quench all his fiery

^h Col. i. 23.ⁱ Heb. iii. 6, 14.^k Jude ver. 20.^l Col. ii. 7.^m 1 Cor. iii. 1.ⁿ Phil. iii. 12, 13.^o Eph. iv. 13.^p 1 Pet. ii. 2.

fiery darts by it, and also to grow in grace, and to perfect holiness in the fear of God; for we are kept by the mighty power of God thro' faith unto salvation ^a. As all our christian warfare is the good fight of faith ^r, all spiritual life and holiness continue, grow, or decay in us, according as faith continueth groweth, or decayeth in vigour: but, when this faith beginneth to sink by fears and doubtings, the man himself beginneth to sink together with it ^s. Faith is like the hand of Moses: while it is held up, Israel prevails; while it is let down, Amalek prevails ^t. This continuance and growth in faith, will require our labour and industry, as well as the beginning; tho' we are to ascribe the glory of all to the grace of God in Christ, who is the finisher as well as the author of it ^u. The church meeteth with great difficulties in her marching thro' the wilderness of this world to the heavenly Canaan, as well as in her first deliverance from Egyptian bondage: yea, we often meet with greater difficulties in going to perfection, than we did in the beginning of the good work: the wisdom and mercy of God so ordering it, that we shall be exercised with the sharpest dispensations of providence, and the fiercest assaults of our own corruptions, and satan's temptations, after we have grace given us to stand in the evil day. You must therefore endeavour to continue and go on in the same right manner as I have taught you to begin this great work of believing in Christ, that your faith may be of the same nature

^a 1 Pet. i. 5. ^r 1 Tim. vi. 12. ^s Matt. xiv. 29, 30, 31.
^t Exod. xvii. 11. ^u Heb. xii. 2.

nature from the beginning to the end, tho' it increase in degrees: for our faith is imperfect, and joined with much unbelief in this world, and we had need to pray still, *Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief*^w; and therefore we have need to strive for more faith, that we may receive Christ in greater perfection. If you find your faith hath produced good works, you should thereby increase your confidence in Christ for salvation by his mere grace. But take heed of changing the nature of your faith, from trusting on the grace and merits of Christ, to trusting on your own works, according to the popish doctrine, That our first justification is by grace and faith only, but our second justification is also by works. Beware also of trusting on faith itself, as a work of righteousness, instead of trusting on Christ by faith. If you do not find, that your believing in such a right manner as I have described, doth produce such fruits of holiness as you desire, you ought not to diminish, but rather to increase your confidence in Christ; knowing that the weakness of your faith hindereth its fruitfulness; and the greater your confidence is concerning the love of God to you in Christ, the greater will be your love to God, and to his service. If you fall into any gross sin after the work is begun in you, as David and Peter did, think not, that you must cast away your confidence, and expect nothing but wrath from God and Christ, and that you must refuse to be comforted by the grace of Christ, at least for some time; for thus you would be the more

more weak, and prone to fall into other sins: but rather strive more confidently, that you have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous; and that he is the propitiation for our sins ^x. And let not the guilt of sin stay at all upon your conscience, but wash it away, with all speed, in the fountain of Christ's blood, which is opened for us, that it may be ready for our use on all such incident occasions; that so you may be humbled for your sins in a gospel-way, and may hate your own sinfulness, and be sorry for it with godly sorrow, out of love to God. Peter might have been ruined for ever, by denying Christ, as Judas was by betraying him, if Peter's faith had not been upheld by the prayer of Christ ^y. If a cloud be cast over all your inward qualifications, so that you can see no grace at all in yourselves; yet still trust on him that justifieth the ungodly, and came to seek and to save them that are lost. If God seem to deal with you as an enemy, by bringing on you some horrible affliction, as he did upon Job, beware of condemning your faith and its fruits, as if they were not acceptable to God; but rather say, with holy Job, "Tho' he slay me, yet will I trust in him; but I will maintain mine own ways before him ^z." Strive to keep and to increase faith by faith; *i. e.* by acting faith frequently, by trusting on God to keep and increase it; being confident, that *he which hath begun a good work in you, will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ* ^a.

DIREC-

^x 1 John ii. 1, 2.
 xiii. 15.

^y Luke xxii. 31, 32.

^z Job

^a Phil. i. 6.

DIRECTION XII.

Make diligent use of your most holy Faith, for the immediate performance of the duties of the law, by walking no longer according to your old natural state, or any principles or means of practice that belong unto it, but only according to that new state which you receive by faith, and the principles and means of practice that properly belong thereunto; and strive to continue and increase in such manner of practice. This is the only way to attain to an acceptable performance of these holy and righteous duties, as far as it is possible in this present life.

EXPLICATION.

HERE I am guiding you to the manner of practice, wherein you are to make use of faith, and of all other effectual means of holiness before treated of, which faith layeth hold on, for the immediate performance of the law; which is the great end aimed at in this whole treatise. And therefore this deserveth to be diligently considered: the principal direction to which all the foregoing and following are subservient. As for the meaning of it, I have already shewed, that our old natural state is that which we derive from the first Adam by natural generation: and it is called, in the scripture, the *old man*; and, while we be in it, we are said to be in the flesh. And our new state is that which we receive from the second Adam, Jesus Christ, by being new-born in union and fellowship with him through faith; and it is called, in scripture, the *new*
man;

man; and, when we are in it, we are said to be in [the Spirit. The principles and means of practice belonging to a natural state, are such as persons do or may attain and make use of, before they are in Christ by faith. Such as belong properly to the new state, are the manifold holy endowments, privileges, and enjoyments, which we partake of in Christ by faith, such as have already appeared to be the only effectual means of a holy life. We are said to walk according to either of these states, or to the principles or means that belong to either of them, when we are moved and guided, by virtue of them, to such actings as are agreeable to them. Thus kings act according to their state, in commanding authoritatively, and in magnificent bounty; poor men, in the way of service and obedience; and children, indiscretely ^b. So the manner of the practice here directed to, consists in moving and guiding ourselves, in the performance of the works of the law, by gospel principles and means. This is the rare and excellent art of godliness, in which every christian should strive to be skilful and expert. The reason why many come off with shame and confusion, after they have a long time laboured with much zeal and industry for the attainment of true godliness, is, because they were never acquainted with this holy art, and never endeavoured to practise it in a right gospel-way. Some worldly arts are called mysteries; but above all, this spiritual art of godliness is, without controversy, a great mystery ^c; because

^b Ephes. i. 7. Prov. xviii. 23. 1 Cor. xiii. 11.
^c 1 Tim. iii. 16.

because the means that are to be made use of in it, are deeply mysterious, as hath been shewed ; and you are not a skilful artist, till you know them, and can reduce them to practice. It is a manner of practice far above the sphere of natural ability, such as would never have entered into the hearts of the wisest in the world, if it had not been revealed to us in the scriptures ; and, when it is there most plainly revealed, continueth a dark riddle to those that are not inwardly enlightened and taught by the Holy Spirit ; such as many godly persons, guided by the Spirit, do in some measure walk in, yet do but obscurely discern : they can hardly perceive their own knowledge of it, and can hardly give any account to others of the way wherein they walk : as the disciples that walked in Christ, the way to the father, and yet perceived not that knowledge in themselves : Lord, we know not whither thou goest, and how can we know the way ^d ? This is the reason why many poor believers are so weak in Christ, and attain so small a degree of holiness and righteousness. Therefore, that you may the better be acquainted with a mystery of so high concernment, I shall shew, in the first place, that the holy scriptures do direct you to this manner of practice, as only effectual for the performance of holy duties ; and then I shall lay before you some necessary instructions, that you may understand how to walk aright in it, and continue and go forward therein, till you be made perfect in Christ.

For

^d John xiv. 5.

For the FIRST of these, the holy scriptures are very large and clear, in directing us to this manner of practice, and to continuance and growth therein. And here it is useful for us to observe the great variety of peculiar words and phrases whereby the Holy Ghost teacheth this mystery, which many that frequently read the scriptures, yea that pretend to be preachers of the gospel, do little understand or regard; shewing thereby, that the things of the Spirit of God are foolishness to them, and that they are not yet acquainted with the form of sound words, and are strangers to the very language of the gospel, which they profess, and pretend to preach. I shall therefore present to your view several of those peculiar words and phrases whereby this mysterious manner of practice is expressed in the holy scriptures, and commanded to you as the only way for the sure attainment of all holiness in heart and life. I shall rank such of them together as agree in sense, that the multitude of them may not breed confusion in your thoughts.

1. This is the manner of practice in scripture, which is expressed by *living by faith*^e; *walking by faith*^f; *faith working by love*^g; *overcoming the world by faith*^h; *quenching all the fiery darts of the wicked, by the shield of faith*ⁱ. Some make no more of *living* and *walking by faith*, than merely a stirring up and encouraging ourselves to our duty by such principles as we believe. Thus the Jews might account

R

that

^e Hab. ii. 4. Gal. ii. 20. Heb. x. 38. ^f 2 Cor. v. 7.
^g Gal. v. 6. ^h 1 John v. 4. ⁱ Eph. vi. 16.

that they lived by faith, because they professed and assented unto the doctrine of Moses and the Prophets, and were moved thereby to a zeal of God, though they sought righteousness not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law^k. Thus Paul might think he lived by faith, while he was a zealous Pharisee; but afterwards he knew, that the life of faith consisted in dying to the law, and living to God; and that not himself, but Christ lived in him^l. As it is one and the same thing, to be justified by faith, and by Christ believed on^m; so to live, walk and work by faith, is all one with living, walking, working by means of Christ, and his saving endowments; which we receive and make use of by faith, to guide and move ourselves to the practice of holiness.

2. The same thing is commended to us by the terms of *walking, rooted and built up in Christⁿ; living to God, and not to ourselves, but to have Christ living in us^o; good conversation in Christ^p; putting on the Lord Jesus Christ, that we may walk honestly as in the day^q; being strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might^r; doing all things in the name of Christ^s; walking up and down in the name of the Lord^t; going in the strength of the Lord; making mention of his righteousness, even of his only^u*. These phrases are frequent, and do sufficiently explain one another; and do shew, that we are to practise holiness, not only by

^k Rom. ix. 32. ^l Gal. ii. 19, 20. ^m Rom. v. 1.
ⁿ Col. ii. 6, 7. ^o Gal. ii. 19, 20. ^p 1 Pet. iii. 16.
^q Rom. xiii. 13, 14. ^r Eph. vi. 10. ^s Col. iii. 17.
^t Zech. x. 12. ^u Psal. lxxi. 16.

by virtue of Christ's authority, but also of his strengthening endowments moving us and encouraging us thereunto.

3. It is also signified by the phrases of *being strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus*^w; *having our conversation in the world, not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God*^x, *having or holding fast grace, that we serve God acceptably, labouring abundantly*, in such a manner, as that the whole work is not performed by us, but by the grace of God that is with us^y. By grace, therefore, we may well understand the privileges of our new state given to us in Christ, whereby we ought to be influenced and guided in the performance of holy duties.

4. It is also signified, when we are to *put off the old*, and *put on the new man*; yea to continue in so doing, tho' we have done it in a measure already, and that we avoid our former sinful conversation^z, and to avoid sin, because we have put off the old, and put on the new man^a. I have already shewed, that by this twofold man is not meant merely sin and holiness; but by the former is meant our natural state, with all its endowments, whereby we are furnished only to the practice of sin; and by the latter, our new state in Christ, that whereby we are furnished with all means necessary for the practice of holiness.

5. We are to understand the same thing, when we are taught *not to walk after the flesh, but after the Spirit*,

R 2

that

^w 2 Tim. ii. 1. ^x 2 Cor. i. 12. ^y 1 Cor. xv. 10.
^z Eph. iv. 21, 22, 24, ^a Col. iii. 9, 10.

that we may be free from the law of sin, and that the righteousness of the law may be fulfilled in us ^b; and *through the Spirit, to mortify the deeds of the body*; and to be *led by the Spirit*, because we live by the Spirit, and have crucified the flesh, with the affections and lusts ^c. The apostle doth shew by these expressions, not only that we are to practise holiness, but also by what means we may do it effectually. By the *flesh* is meant our old nature derived from the first Adam; and by the *Spirit* is meant the Spirit of Christ, and that new nature which we have by him dwelling in us. We are said to walk after either of these natures, when we make the properties or qualifications of either of them to be the principles of our practice. So, when we are taught to serve in *newness of Spirit*, and not in the *oldness of the letter*, that so we may bring forth fruit unto God, the meaning is, that we must endeavour to bring forth the fruits of holiness, not by virtue of the law, that killing letter, to which the flesh is married, and by which the motions of sin are in us; but by virtue of the Spirit, and his manifold riches, which we partake of in our new state, by a mystical marriage with Christ ^d; and by virtue of such principles as belong to the new state declared in the gospel, whereby the Holy Spirit is ministered to us.

6. This is the manner of walking which the apostle Paul directeth us unto, when he teacheth us by his own example, that the continual work of our lives should be, “to know Christ, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being
“ made

^b Rom. viii. 1, 2, 3. ^c Gal. v. 24. ^d Rom. vii. 4, 5, 6.

“made conformable to his death; if by any means
“we may attain unto the resurrection of the dead,
“and to increase and press forward in this kind of
“knowledge.” Certainly, he meaneth such an
experimental knowledge of Christ, and his death and
resurrection, as effectually makes us conformable
thereunto, in dying unto sin, and living unto God.
And he would hereby guide us, to make use of
Christ, and his death and resurrection, by faith, as
the powerful means of all holiness in heart and life;
and to increase in this manner of walking, until we
attain unto perfection in Christ.

The SECOND thing proposed was, to lay before
you some necessary instructions, that your steps may
be guided aright, to continue and go forward in this
way of holiness, until you be made perfect in Christ.
And, seeing we are naturally prone to mistake this
way, and are utterly unable to find it out, or dis-
cern it, by our own reason and understanding, we
should the more diligently attend to these in-
structions taken out of the holy scriptures. And
we should pray earnestly, that God would give unto
us the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, that we may
discern the way of holiness thereby, and walk aright
in it; according to that gracious promise, “The
“wayfaring men, tho’ fools, shall not err therein.”

I. Let us observe and consider diligently in our
whole conversation, that though we are partakers
of a new holy state by faith in Christ, yet our na-
tural state doth remain, in a measure, with all its

R 3

corrupt

* Phil. iii. 10, 11, 12, 14:

† Is. xxxv. 8.

corrupt principles and properties. As long as we live in this present world, our apprehension of Christ, and his perfection, in this life, is only by faith; whereas by sense and reason, we may apprehend much in ourselves contrary to Christ: and this faith is imperfect; so that true believers have cause to pray to God to help their unbelief^z. Therefore, tho' we receive perfect Christ by faith, yet the measure and degree of enjoying him is imperfect; and we hope still, so long as we are in this world, to enjoy him in a higher degree of perfection, than we have done. We are yet but weak in Christ^h; children in comparison to the perfection we expect in another worldⁱ; and we must grow still, till we come to the perfect man^k; and some are weaker babes than others, and have received Christ in so small a measure, that they may be accounted carnal rather than spiritual^l. And because all the blessings and perfections of our new state, as justification, the gift of the Spirit, and of the holy nature, and the adoption of children, are seated and treasured up in Christ, and joined with him inseparably, we can receive them no further, than we receive Christ himself by faith; which we do in an imperfect measure and degree in this life. The apostle Paul proposeth himself as a pattern for all those that are perfect in the truth of grace to imitate: and yet he professeth, that he was not yet made so perfect in the degree or measure of saving endowments, but that he did still press forward towards the mark for the prize

^z Mark ix. 24. ^h 2 Cor. xiii. 4. ⁱ 1 Cor. xiii.
10, 11. ^k Eph. iv. 13. ^l 1 Cor. iii. 1.

prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus, labouring still to apprehend and win Christ more perfectly, and to be found in him not having his own righteousness, but that which is of God by faith; and to gain more experimental knowledge of Christ, and of the fellowship of his sufferings, and the power of his resurrection, being made conformable thereunto^m. Believers are justified already; yet wait for the hope of righteousness by faith, *i. e.* for the full enjoyment of the righteousness of Christⁿ. They have received but the first fruits of the Spirit, and must wait for a more full enjoyment of it. The Spirit witnesseth now to them, that they are the children of God; and yet they groan within themselves, waiting for more full enjoyment of adoption^o. Now, seeing the degree and measure of our reception and enjoyment of Christ, with all the blessings of our new state in him, in this life, is imperfect, it followeth clearly, that our contrary natural state, with its properties, remaineth still in us in some degree, and is not perfectly abolished; so that all believers in this world do, in some degree, partake of these two contrary states. Believers have indeed put off the old man, and put on the new man, where Christ is all and in all^p; yet they are to put the old man off and the new man on more and more, because the old man remaineth still in a measure. They are said to be, not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, because their being in the Spirit is their best and lasting state; as denominations are usually taken

R 4

from

^m Phil. iii. 8, 10, 14.
23. ^p Col. iii. 10, 11.

ⁿ Gal. v. 5.

^o Rom. viii.

from the better part: but yet the flesh is in them, and they find work enough to mortify the deeds of it⁹. Therefore several things which are contrary to each other, are frequently attributed to believers in the Scripture, with respect to these two contrary states, wherein one place seems to contradict another; and yet both are true in divers respects. Thus holy Paul saith truly of himself, I live, yet not I^r; because he did live to God by Christ living in him: and yet, in another respect according to his natural state, he did not live to God. Again he professeth, that he was carnal, sold under sin; and yet on the contrary, that he allowed not sin, but hated it. He sheweth how both these were true concerning himself in divers respects. He saith, *In me (that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing; and, I delight to do the will of God according to the inward man. With the mind I myself serve the law of God; but, with the flesh, the law of sin^s*. John saith, *He that saith he hath no sin, deceiveth himself, and is a liar^t*; and also that it is true, that *whosoever is born of God, doth not commit sin; for his seed, i. e. Christ's, the new spiritual nature, remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God^u*. It is true, that we are weak and nothing; and yet strong and able to do all things^w. It is true, that believers are dead, because of sin; but alive, because of righteousness^x; and that, when they die by a natural death, they shall never die^y. They are sons that have the inheritance by their birth-right;

⁹ Rom. viii. 9, 13.^r Gal. ii. 20.^s Rom. vii.

14, 15, 18, 22, 25.

^t John i. 8.^u John iii. 9.^w 2 Cor. xii. 10, 11.

Phil. iv. 13.

^x Rom. viii. 10.^y John xi. 25, 26.

right, and yet, in some respects, may differ nothing from servants; and so they may be under the law, in a sense, and yet under grace, and heirs, according to the free promise, at the same time ². They are redeemed from the curse of the law, and have forgiveness of sins, and a promise, that God will never be wroth with them, nor rebuke them any more ^a; and yet, on the contrary, the curse written in the law is sometimes poured out upon them ^b; and they have need still to pray, that God would deliver them from their guiltiness, and forgive their debts ^c; and they may expect, that God will punish them for all their iniquities ^d. These contrary things asserted concerning believers in Scripture, do sufficiently manifest, that they partake of two contrary states in this life. And this is a plain, easy and ready way to reconcile these seeming contradictions, whatever other ways be used to reconcile some of them. And what reason is there to question, that the old state that remaineth in believers in some degrees, seeing all sound Protestants acknowledge, that the sinful depravation and pollution of our natures, commonly called original sin, which is one principal part of the old state, doth remain in all as long as they live in this world? Now, tho' some penal evils may be said to remain in us, yet we cannot suppose, that this original pollution is continued in us as considered in Christ; but as considered in our old state derived from the first Adam. Therefore the first sin of Adam is imputed, in some respect, even to

² Gal. iv. 1, 2.

^a Gal. iii. 13. Eph. i. 7. Isa. liv. 9.

^b Dan. ix. 11.

^c Psal. li. 14. Matt. vi. 12.

^d Amos

li. 2.

to those that are justified by faith; and they remain, in a measure, as aforesaid, under the punishment and curse denounced *. “In the day thou eatest thereof, thou shalt surely die.” And, on this account, the same original guilt and pollution is propagated to the children of believing parents, as well as others, by natural generation. And, if such a great and fundamental part of the natural state continue in believers, as subjection to the guilt of the first sin and original corruption, which is one great part of the punishment and death threatened, and by which we are prone and inclined to all actual sins; why should we not judge, that other parts of the same state do likewise continue in them, as the guilt of their own actual sins, and subjection to the wrath of God, and the curses and punishments denounced against them in the law? and why should we not judge, that all the miseries of this life, and death itself, are inflicted upon believers, at least in some respect, as punishments of sin? It may be objected, That a doctrine of a twofold state of believers in this life, doth much derogate from the perfection of our justification by Christ, and from the fulness of all the grace and spiritual blessings of Christ, and from the merits of his death, and the power of his Spirit; and that it greatly diminisheth the consolation of believers in Christ. But it may be easily vindicated from this objection, if we understand it rightly; for, notwithstanding this twofold state, it still holdeth true, that believers, while they are on earth, have all perfection of spiritual blessings,

* Gen. ii. 17.

blessings, justification, adoption, the gift of the Spirit, holiness, eternal life and glory in and with Christ ^f. In the person of Christ, who is now in heaven, the old man is perfectly crucified; they are dead to sin, and to the law and its curse, and they are quickened together with him, and raised up with him, and made to sit in heavenly places, in Christ ^g. And believers do in their own persons receive and enjoy by faith all these perfect spiritual blessings of Christ, as far as they receive and enjoy Christ himself dwelling in them, and no further. Thus far they are in a new state, free from the guilt, pollution, and punishment of sin, and so from the wrath of God and all miseries, and death itself, while they are in this world; yea all the guilt, pollution, and punishments of sin, and all evils whatever, which they are subject to according to their natural state, do them no harm according to this new state, but work for their good; and are no evils, but rather advantages to them, tending to the destruction only of the flesh, and to the perfection of the new man in Christ. Yet it holdeth true also, that our reception and enjoyment of Christ himself and all his perfections, is but in an imperfect measure and degree, until faith be turned into heavenly vision and fruition of Christ; and therefore our old sinful state, with the evils thereof, is not perfectly abolished during this life. The kingdom of heaven, or the grace of Christ within us, is like leaven in meal, which doth not unite itself perfectly to the meal in an instant, but by degrees, until the whole be leavened ^h;
or

^f Eph. i. 3.^g Eph. ii. 6.^h Matt. xiii. 33.

or like the morning light, that expelleth darkness by degrees, shining more and more unto the perfect day¹. This cannot be justly accounted any derogation from the merits of Christ's death, or from the power of his Spirit, seeing Christ never intended to bring to pass by his death, or by the power of his Spirit, that we should enjoy his spiritual blessings any further than we are in him, and enjoy him by faith; or that we should be made holy or happy according to the flesh, by a reformation of our natural state; as hath been shewed. Neither doth this diminish the consolation of believers in Christ: for thereby they may know, that they have the perfection of grace and happiness in Christ, and that they enjoy it in this world, as far as they enjoy Christ himself by faith; and that they shall enjoy it in a perfect measure, and be fully freed from their sinful and miserable state, when that frame of nature which they received from the first Adam, is dissolved by death.

This instruction is very useful to frame our souls aright for the practising holiness only by those gospel principles and means that belong to our new state, which we are partakers of by faith in Christ. And thus it is easily vindicated from another great objection, wherein the Papists and Quakers do much triumph. They appeal to mens consciences to answer this question, Which doctrine is most likely to bring people to the practice of true godliness; theirs, which teacheth, That perfect holiness may be attained in this life; or ours, which teacheth, That
it

¹ Prov. iv. 18.

it is impossible for us to keep the law perfectly, and to purge ourselves from all sin, as long as we live in this world, though we use our best endeavours? They think that common reason will make the verdict pass for them against our doctrine, as that which discourageth all endeavours for perfection, and hardeneth the hearts of people, to allow themselves in sin, because they cannot avoid it. But, on the contrary, the doctrine of Perfectionists hardens people, to allow themselves in sin, and to call evil good; as the Papists account, that the concupiscence of the flesh against the Spirit, is no sin, but rather good matter for the exercise of their virtues, because the most perfect in this life are not without it. It also discourageth those that labour to get holiness in the right way, by faith in Christ, and maketh them to think that they labour in vain, because they find themselves still sinful, and far from perfection, when they have done their best to attain it. It hindereth our diligence in seeking holiness by those principles and means whereby only it can be found: for who will be diligent and watchful to avoid walking according to his own carnal principles, if he think, that his own carnal state, with its principles, is quite abolished, and is out of him, so that at present he is in no danger of walking according to them? Whatsoever good works the doctrine of the Perfectionists may serve to promote, I am sure it hindereth a great part of that work which Christ would have us to be employed in as long as we live in this world. We must know, that our old state, with its evil principles, continueth still in a measure, or else we shall not be fit for the great duties

duties of confessing of sins, loathing ourselves for them, praying earnestly for the pardon of them, a just sorrowing for them with a godly sorrow, accepting the punishment of our sins, and giving God the glory of his justice, and offering to him the sacrifice of a broken and contrite spirit, being poor in spirit, working out our salvation with fear and trembling. Some have doubted, how it can consist with our justification by Christ, that we should be still liable to be punished for our sins, and obliged to pray for the pardon of them; because they have not well considered the twofold state of believers in this life. And, except we know this, and keep it in mind, we shall never be fit to practise continually the great duties that tend to the putting off the old man, and putting on the new man, and mortifying the deeds of the body by the Spirit, praying continually, that God would renew a right spirit in us, and sanctify us throughout: pressing forward to perfection, desiring the sincere milk of the word, and the enjoyment of other ordinances. Christ hath appointed, that his church on earth should be employed in such works: and Perfectionists either do, or fain would account them needless for them, and that they have no longer need of Christ himself, to be their spiritual physician and advocate with the Father, and propitiation for their sins; therefore they are not fit to be members of the church on earth, and are never likely to be members of the church in heaven, except they can make a ladder, and climb up thither before their time.

2. Despair of purging the flesh or natural man of its sinful lusts and inclinations, and of practising holiness, by your willing and resolving to do the best that lieth in your own power, and trusting on the grace of God and Christ, to help you in such resolutions and endeavours : rather resolve to trust on Christ, to work in you to will and to do by his own power, according to his own good pleasure. They that are convinced of their own sin and misery, do commonly first think to tame the flesh, and to subdue and root out its lusts, and to make their corrupt nature to be better-natured, and inclined to holiness, by their struggling and wrestling with it : and, if they can but bring their hearts to a full purpose and resolution to do the best that lieth in them, they hope, that, by such a resolution, they shall be able to atchieve great enterprises in the conquest of their lusts, and performance of the most difficult duties. It is the great work of some zealous divines, in their preaching and writings, to stir up people to this resolution, wherein they place the chiefest turning point from sin to godliness. And they think, that this is not contrary to the life of faith, because they trust on the grace of God thro' Christ, to help them in all such resolutions and endeavours. Thus they endeavour to reform their old state, and to be made perfect in the flesh, instead of putting it off, and walking according to the new state in Christ. They trust on low carnal things for holiness, and upon the acts of their own will, their purposes, resolutions and endeavours, instead of Christ ; and they trust to Christ, to help them in this carnal way : whereas true faith would teach them, that
they

they are nothing, and that they do but labour in vain. They may as well wash a blackmoor white, as purge the flesh or natural man from its evil lusts, and make it pure and holy. It is desperately wicked, past all cure. It will unavoidably lust against the Spirit of God, even in the best saints on earth ^k. Its mind is enmity to the law of God ; and neither is, nor can be subject to it ^l. They that would cure it, and make it holy, by their own resolutions and endeavours, do act quite contrary to the design of Christ's death ; for he died, not that the flesh, or old natural man, might be made holy ; but that it might be crucified, and destroyed out of us ^m ; and that we might live to God, not to ourselves, or by any natural power of our own resolutions or endeavours, but by Christ living in us, and by his Spirit bringing forth the fruits of righteousness in us ⁿ. Therefore we must be content to leave the natural man vile and wicked, as we found it, until it be utterly abolished by death ; tho' we must not allow its wickedness, but rather grone to be delivered from the body of this death, thanking God that there is a deliverance thro' Jesus Christ our Lord. Our way to mortify sinful affections and lusts, must be, not by purging them out of the flesh, but by putting off the flesh itself, and getting above into Christ by faith, and walking in that new nature that is by him, Thus " the way of life is " above to the wise, that he may depart from " hell beneath °." Our willing, resolving and endeavouring

^k Gal. v. 17.^l Rom. viii. 7.^m Rom. vi. 6ⁿ Gal. ii. 20. & chap. v. 24, 25.

° Prov. xv. 24.

deavouring, must be, to do the best, not that lieth in ourselves, or in our own power, but that Christ and the power of his Spirit shall be pleased to work in us: for in us, *i. e.* in our flesh, there dwelleth no good thing ^p. We have great ground to trust in God and Christ for help in such resolutions and endeavours after holiness, as in things that are agreeable to the design of Christ in our redemption, and to the way of acting and living by faith. It is likely, that Peter sincerely resolved to die with Christ, rather than to deny him, and to do all that he could by his own power for that end; but Christ made him quickly to see the weakness and vanity of such resolutions. And we see by experience, what many resolutions made in sickness and other dangers mostly come to. It is not enough for us to trust on Christ, to help us to act and endeavour so far only as creatures; for so the worst of men are helped: he is the JEHOVAH in whom they live, move, and have their being ^q. And it is likely the Pharisee would trust on God, to help him in duty; as he would thank God for the performance of duty ^r. And this is all the faith that many make use of in order to a holy practice. But we must trust on Christ, to enable us above the strength of our own natural power, by virtue of the new nature which we have in Christ, and by his Spirit dwelling and working in us; or else our best endeavours will be altogether sinful, and mere hypocrisy, notwithstanding all the help for which we trust upon him. We must also take heed of depending for holiness upon
S any

^p Rom. vii. 18. ^q Acts xvii. 28. ^r Luke xviii. 11.

any resolution to walk in Christ, or any written covenants, or any holiness that we have already received ; for we must know, that the virtue of these things continues no longer than we continue walking in Christ, and Christ in us. They must be kept up by the continual presence of Christ in us ; as light is maintained by the presence of the sun, and cannot subsist without it.

3. You must not seek to procure forgiveness of sins, the favour of God, a new holy nature, life, and happiness, by any works of the moral law, or by any rites and ceremonies whatever ; but rather you must work as those that have all these things already, according to your new state in Christ ; as such who are only to receive them more and more by faith, as they are ready prepared and treasured up for you, and freely given to you, in your spiritual head, the Lord Jesus Christ. If we walk as those that are yet wholly to seek for the procurement of such enjoyments as these, it is a manifest sign, that, at present, we judge ourselves to be without them, and without Christ himself ; in whose fulness they are all contained : and therefore we walk according to our old natural state, as those that are yet in the flesh, and that would get salvation in it, and by our carnal works and observances, instead of living altogether on Christ by faith. This practice is according to the tenor of the covenant of works ; as I have before shewed. And we have no ground to trust on Christ and his Spirit, to work holiness in us this way ; for we are dead to the legal covenant by the body of Christ ; and, *if we be led*

by

* Rom. vii. 4.

by the Spirit, we are not under the law^t. When the Galatians were seduced, by false teachers, to seek the procurement of justification and life by circumcision, and other works of the Mosaical law, the apostle Paul rebuketh them for seeking to be made perfect in the flesh, directly contrary to their good beginning in the Spirit, for rendering Christ of none effect to them, and for falling from grace^u. And when some of the Colossians sought perfection in the like manner, by observation of circumcision, holy meats, holy times, and other rudiments of the world, the same apostle blameth them for not holding the head Jesus Christ, and as such as were not dead and risen with Christ, but living merely in the world^w. He clearly sheweth, that those who seek any saving enjoyments in such a way, do walk according to their old natural state; and that the true manner of living by faith in Christ, is, to walk as those that have all fulness and perfection of spiritual blessings in Christ by faith, and need not seek for them any other way to procure them for themselves. In this sense, it is a true saying, That believers should not act for life, but from life, They must act as those that are not procuring life by their works, but as such who have already received and derived life from Christ, and act from the power and virtue received from him. And hereby it appears, that the Papists, and all others that think to justify, purify, sanctify, and save themselves by any of their own works, rites, or ceremonies whatever, do walk in a carnal way, as those that are with-

S 2

out

^t Gal. v. 18.
19, 20. & iii. 1.^u Gal. iii. 3. & v. 4.^w Col. ii.

out any present interest in Christ, and shall never attain unto holiness or happiness, until they learn a better way of religion.

4. Think not, that you can effectually incline your heart to the immediate practice of holiness, by any such practical principles, as do only serve to bind, press, and urge you to the performance of holy duties: but rather let such principles stir you up to go to Christ first by faith, that you may be effectually inclined to the immediate practice of holiness in him by gospel principles, that strengthen and enable you, as well as oblige you thereunto. There are some practical principles, that do only bind, press, and urge us to holy duties, by shewing the reasonableness, equity, and necessity of our obedience, without shewing at all, how we that are by nature dead in sin, under the wrath of God, may have any strength and ability for the performance of them: as for instance, the authority of God the lawgiver, our absolute dependence on him as our creator, preserver, governor, in whose hand is our life, breath, and all our happiness here and for ever; his all-seeing eye, that searcheth our heart, discerneth our very thoughts and secret purposes; his exact justice, in rendering to all according to their works; his almighty and eternal power, to reward those that obey him, and to punish transgressors for ever; the unspeakable joy of heaven, and terrible damnation of hell. Such principles as these do bind our consciences very strictly, and do work very strongly upon the prevalent affections of hope and fear, to press and urge our hearts to the performance of holy duties, if we believe them assuredly, and work them earnestly

earnestly upon our hearts, by frequent, serious, lively meditation. And therefore some account them the most forcible and effectual means to form any virtue in the soul, and to bring it to immediate performance of any duty, though never so difficult; and that the life of faith consisteth principally in our living to God in holiness, by a constant belief and meditation on them. And they account those things that serve to mind them of such principles, very effectual for holiness; as, looking on the picture of death or on a death's-head, keeping a coffin by them ready made, walking about among the graves, &c. But this is not that manner of living to God whereof the apostle speaketh, when he saith, *I live, yet not I, but Christ liveth in me; and the life which I live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me* *. If a man make use of these obliging principles, to stir him to go to Christ for strength to act holily, he walketh like one that hath received Christ as his only life by faith; otherwise, he walketh like other natural men. For the natural man may be brought to act by these principles, partly by natural light, and more fully by scripture light, without any true knowledge of the way of salvation by Christ, and as if Christ had never come into the world. And he may be strictly bound by them, and vehemently urged and pressed to holy duties; and yet, all this while, is left to his own natural strength, or rather weakness, being not assured by any of these principles, that God will give him strength to help him in the performance of these

S 3

duties;

* Gal. ii. 20.

duties ; and can do nothing aright, until he get new life and strength in Christ, if these principles were sufficient to bring us to a holy conversation. Therefore this manner of practice is no better than walking after the flesh, according to our corrupt state, and a seeking to be made perfect in the flesh. No question but Paul was very diligent in it while he was a blind Pharisee. Yea the heathen philosophers might attain to it, in some measure, by the light of common reason. The devils have such principles, as they do believe assuredly ; yet they are never the better for them. It is a part of that natural wisdom whereby *the world knew not God*, not that *wisdom of God in a mystery*, discovered in the gospel, which is the only satisfying wisdom and power of God unto salvation. What can you produce but corruption, by pressing with motives to holiness, one that hath no soundness in him, from the sole of the foot even to the head, only wounds, and bruises, and putrifying sores. He that is made truly sensible of his own vileness and deadness by nature, will despair of ever bringing himself to holiness by principles that afford him no life and strength, but only lay an obligation upon him, and urge and press him to duty. What are mere obligations to one that is dead in sin ? While the soul is without spiritual life, sin is the more moved and enraged, by pressing and urging upon the soul the obligations of the law, and its commands. *The motions of sin are by the law ; and sin taking occasion by the commandment, worketh in us all manner of concupiscence* ^{v.} And yet

yet these obliging principles are very good and excellent in this right gospel-use of them ; as the apostle saith of the law, that it is good, if it be used lawfully ^z. The humbled sinner knoweth well his obligations ; but it is life and strength that he wanteth, and despaireth of walking according to such obligations, until he get this life and strength by faith in Christ. - Therefore these obliging principles do move him to go, in the first place, to Christ, that so he may be enabled to answer their end, by the strengthening and enlivening principles of God's grace in Christ. Some there are that make use of gospel-principles, only to oblige and urge to duty, without affording any life and strength for the performance ; as they that think Christ died and rose again to establish a new covenant of works for our salvation, and to give us a pattern of good works by his own obedience, rather than to purchase life, obedience, and good works for us. Such as these do not understand and receive the principles of the gospel rightly : but they pervert and abuse them, contrary to their true nature and design ; and thereby they render them as ineffectual for their sanctification, as any other natural or legal principles.

5. Stir up and strengthen yourself to perform the duties of holiness, by a firm persuasion of your enjoyment of Jesus Christ, and all spiritual and everlasting benefits thro' him. Set not yourselves upon the performance of the law, with any prevailing thoughts or apprehensions, that you are yet without an interest in Christ, and the love of God thro'

S 4

him ;

^z 1 Tim. i. 8.

him; under the curse of the law, the power of sin and Satan; having no better portion than this present world: no better strength, than that which is in the purposes and resolutions of your own free will. While such thoughts as these prevail, and influence your actings, it is evident, that you walk according to the principles and practices of your old natural state; and you will be moved thereby, to yield to the dominion of sin and satan, to withdraw yourselves from God and godliness, as Adam was moved, from the sight of his own nakedness, to hide himself from God^a. Therefore your way to a holy practice, is, first to conquer and expel such unbelieving thoughts, by trusting confidently on Christ, and persuading yourselves by faith, that his righteousness, Spirit, glory, and all his spiritual benefits, are yours; and that he dwelleth in you, and you in him. In the might of this confidence, you shall go forth to the performance of the law; and you will be strong against sin and satan, and able to do all things thro' Christ that strengthens you. This confident persuasion is of great necessity to the right framing and disposing our hearts to walk according to our new state in Christ. The life of faith principally consisteth in it. And herein it eminently appeareth, that faith is a hand, not only to receive Christ, but also to work by him; and that it cannot be effectual for our sanctification, except it contain in it some assurance of our interest in Christ; as hath been shewed. Thus we act as those that are above the sphere of nature, advanced to union
and

^a Gen. iii. 10.

and fellowship with Christ. The apostle maintained in his heart a persuasion that Christ had loved him, and given himself for him; and thereby he was enabled to live to God in holiness, through Christ living in him by faith. He teacheth us also that we must maintain the like persuasion, if we would walk holily in Christ. We must know, that our old man is crucified with him; and we must reckon ourselves dead indeed unto sin, and alive unto God thro' Jesus Christ our Lord ^b. This is the means whereby we may be filled with the Spirit, strong in the Lord, and in the Power of his might; which God would not require of us, if he had not appointed the means ^c. Christ himself walked in a constant persuasion of his excellent state; he set the Lord always before him, and was persuaded, that, because God was at his right hand, he should not be moved ^d. How should it be rationally expected, that a man should act according to this new state, without assurance that he is in it? It is a rule of common prudence in all worldly callings and conditions, that every one must know and well consider his own state, lest he should act proudly above it, or sordidly below it. And it is a hard thing to bring some to a right estimate of their own worldly condition. If the same rule were observed in spiritual things, doubtless the knowledge and persuasion of the glory and excellency of our new state in Christ, would more elevate the hearts of believers above all sordid slavery to their lusts, and enlarge them to run chearfully the ways of God's command-

^b Rom. vi. 6, 11.^c Eph. vi. 20.^d Psal. xvi. 8.

mandments. If Christians knew their own strength better, they would enterprize greater things for the glory of God. But this knowledge is difficultly attained: it is only by faith and spiritual illumination. The best know but in part; and hence it is, that the conversation of believers falleth so much below their holy and heavenly calling.

6. Consider what endowments, privileges, or properties of your new state are most meet and forcible to incline and strengthen your heart to love God above all, and to renounce all sin, and to give up yourself to universal obedience to his commands; and strive to walk in the persuasion of them, that you may attain to the practice of these great duties. I may well join these together, because, to love the Lord with all our hearts, might, and soul, is the first and great commandment, which influenceth us to all obedience, with a hatred and detestation of all sin, as it is contrary and hateful to God. The same effectual means that produceth the one, will also produce the other; and holiness chiefly consisteth in these. So the chief blessings of our holy state are most meet and forcible to enable us for the immediate performance of them, and are to be made use of to this end by faith. Particularly, you must believe stedfastly, that all your sins are blotted out, and that you are reconciled to God, and have access into his favour by the blood of Christ, and that he is your God and Father, and altogether love to you, and your all-sufficient everlasting portion and happiness thro' Christ. Such apprehensions as these, do present God as a very lovely object to our hearts, and do thereby allure
and

and win our affections, that cannot be forced by commands or threatnings, but must be sweetly won and drawn by allurements. We must not harbour any suspicions, that God will prove a terrible, everlasting enemy to us, if we would love him : for there is no fear in love ; but perfect love casteth out fear, because fear hath torment ; he that feareth is not made perfect in love. We love him, because he first loved us *. David loved the Lord, because he was persuaded, that he was his strength, rock, fortress, his God, and the horn of his salvation †. Love that causeth obedience unto the law, must proceed from a good conscience purged from sin ; and this good conscience must proceed from faith unfeigned, whereby we apprehend the remission of our sins, our reconciliation with God by the merits of the blood of Christ ‡. For the same end, that your hearts may be rightly fitted and framed for the performance of these principal duties, the holy scripture directeth you to walk in the persuasion of other principal endowments of your new state : as, that you have *fellowship with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ* ^h; that you are the *temple of the living God* ⁱ; that you *live by the Spirit* ^k, that you are *called to holiness, and created in Christ Jesus unto good works* ; that God will *sanctify you wholly, and make you perfect in holiness at the last* ^l, that your *old man is crucified with Christ* ; and thro' him you are *dead unto sin, and alive unto God : and being made free from sin, you are become the servants of righteousness,*
and

* 1 John iv. 18, 19. † Psal. xviii. 1. 2. ‡ 1 Tim. i. 5. Heb. ix. 14. ^h 1 John i. 3. ⁱ 2 Cor. vi. 16. ^k Gal. v. 25. ^l 1 Thess. v. 23. Eph. ii. 10.

and have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life ^m; *ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. When Christ who is your life shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory* ⁿ. Such persuasions as these, when they are deeply rooted and constantly maintained in our hearts, do strongly arm and encourage us to practise universal obedience, in opposition to every sinful lust; because we look upon it, not only as our duty, but our great priviledge, to do all things thro' Christ strengthening us: and God doth certainly work in us both to will and to do by these principles, because they properly belong to the gospel, or New Testament, which is the ministration of the Spirit, and the power of God unto salvation ^o.

7. For the performance of other duties of the law, you are to consider, not only these endowments, privileges, and properties of your new state, which are meet and forcible to enable you to the love of God, and universal obedience, but also those that have a peculiar force and aptitude suitable to the special nature of such duties: and you must endeavour to assure yourselves of them by faith, that you may be encouraged and strengthened to perform the duties. I shall give you some instances of this manner of practice in several duties, whereby you may the better understand how to guide yourselves in the rest. And, as to the duties of the first table, if you would draw near to God in a duty of his worship with a true heart, you must do it in full assurance of faith concerning your enjoyment of Christ, and his salvation.

^m Rom. vi. 6, 22. ⁿ Col. iii. 3, 4. ^o 2 Cor. iii. 6. 8. Rom. i. 16.

tion. And would you perform the great duty of trusting on the Lord with all your heart, casting your care upon him, and committing the disposal of yourself to him in all your concerns? persuade yourself thro' Christ, that God, according to his promise, will never fail you, nor forsake you; that he taketh a fatherly care of you, that he will with-hold no good thing from you; and will make all things to work for your good. And thus you will be strong and courageous in the practice of this duty: whereas, if you live in a mere suspense concerning your interest in the privileges, you will be subject to carnal fears, and carking cares, in despite of your heart; and you will be prone to trust on the arm of flesh, tho' your conscience tell you plainly, that, in so doing, you incur the heinous guilt of idolatry. Would you be strengthened to submit to the hand of God with a chearful patience, in bearing any affliction, and death itself; the way to fortify yourselves, is, to believe assuredly, that your afflictions which are but for a moment, do work for you a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory; that Christ is your gain in death and life; that his grace is sufficient for you, and his strength made perfect in your weakness; and that he will not suffer you to be tempted above that you are able; and will at last make you more than conquerors over all evil. Until you attain to such persuasions as these, you will be prone to fret and murmur under the burden of affliction, and to use indirect means to deliver yourselves, notwithstanding the clearest convictions to the contrary. Would you limit yourselves to the observation of God's own institutions in his worship? believe,

believe, that you are compleat in Christ, and have all perfection of spiritual blessings in him; and that God will build you up in Christ by the ordinances of his own appointment. This will make you account his ordinances sufficient, and mens traditions and inventions needless in the worship of God: whereas, if you do not apprehend all fullness in Christ, you will be like the *Papists*, prone to catch at every straw, and to multiply superstitious observations without end, for the supply of your spiritual wants. Would you confess your sins to God, pray to him, and praise him heartily for his benefits? Would you praise him for affliction, as well as prosperity? believe assuredly, that God is faithful and just to forgive your sin thro' Christ; that you are made a holy Priesthood, to offer spiritual sacrifices of prayer and praises, that are acceptable to God thro' Christ; and that God heareth your prayers, and will fulfil them, so far as they are good for you; and that all God's ways are mercy and truth toward you, whether he prosper or afflict you in this life. If you be altogether in doubt, or otherwise persuaded, concerning these privileges, all your confessions, prayers, and praises will be but heartless lip-labours, slavish or pharisaical works. In like manner, you will be enabled to hear and receive the word as the word of God, and to meditate on it with delight; and you will be willing to know the strictness and spirituality of the commands of God, and to try and examine your ways impartially by them, if you *believe assuredly*, that the word is the power of God unto salvation; and that Christ is your great physician, willing and able to heal you, be the case

never

never so bad; and, where your sin abounds, his grace towards you doth so much the more abound: whereas, without these comfortable apprehensions, all the works of hearing, meditation, self-examination, will be but uncouth, heartless works, and they will be performed negligently, and by halves, or hypocritically, and out of slavish fear, with much reluctance, without any good will, or readiness of mind. So also, for the right receiving the sacraments, you will find yourselves much strengthened by believing, that you may have communion with God and Christ in them, and that you have a great High Priest to bear the iniquity of your holy things, and to make you for ever accepted before the Lord.

In the same way, you are to apply yourselves to all duties towards your neighbour, required in the second table of the law, by acting in a persuasion of such privileges of your new estate as have a peculiar force to encourage and strengthen you for the performance of them. That you may love your neighbour as you self, and do to him in all things as you would he should do to you, without partiality and self-seeking; that you may give him his due honour, and abstain from injuring him in his life, chastity, worldly estate, good name, or from coveting any thing that is his, according to the several commands in the second table of the decalogue; you must walk in a persuasion, not only that these things are just and equitable toward your fellow-creatures, and that you are strictly bound to the performance of them; but that they are the will of your heavenly Father, who hath begotten you according to his own image

image in righteousness and true holiness, and hath given you his Spirit, that you may be like minded to him in all things; and that they are the mind of Christ, who dwelleth in you, and you in him; that God and Christ are kind, tender-hearted, long-suffering, full of goodness to men, whether good or bad, friends or enemies, poor or rich; and that Christ came into the world, not to destroy, but to save, and that you are of the same Spirit; that the injuries done to you by your neighbours, can do you no harm; and you need not seek any good for yourselves by injuring them, because you have all desirable happiness in Christ: and all things, tho' intended by your enemies for your hurt, certainly work for your good thro' Christ. Such apprehensions as these, wrought in us by the Spirit of faith, do certainly beget in us a right frame of Spirit, thoroughly furnished for every good work towards our neighbour. Likewise your hearts will be purified to unfeigned love of the brethren in Christ, and you will walk toward them with all lowliness, meekness, long-suffering, forbearing one another in love, if you maintain a stedfast belief and persuasion of those manifold bonds of love whereby you are inseparably joined with them thro' Christ; as particularly, that there is one body, and one Spirit, one hope of your calling, one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and Father of all, who is above all, and thro' all, and in you all. Finally, you will be able to abstain from all fleshly and worldly lusts, that war against the soul, and hinder all godliness, by an assured persuasion, not merely, that gluttony, drunkenness, lechery, are filthy swinish abominations;

tions;

tions: and that the pleasures, profits, and honours of the world; are vain, empty things; but that you are crucified to the flesh and the world, and quickened, raised, and sit in heavenly places together with Christ; and that you have pleasures, profits, and honours in Christ, to which the best things in the world are not worthy to be compared; and that you are members of Christ, the temple of his Spirit, citizens of heaven, children of the day, not of the night, nor of darkness, so that it is below your state and dignity to practise deeds of darkness, and mind fleshly worldly things. Thus I have given instances enough; to stir you up to acquaint yourselves with the manifold endowments, privileges, properties of your new state in Christ, as they are discovered in the gospel of your salvation, whereby the new nature is fitted for holy operations; as the common nature of man is furnished with the endowments necessary for those functions and operations to which it is designed; and also to stir you up, to make use of them by faith, as they serve to strengthen you either for universal obedience, or for particular duties. And, by this manner of walking, your hearts will be comforted, and established in every good word and work; and you will grow in holiness, until you attain to perfection in Jesus Christ.

8. If you endeavour to grow in grace, and in all holiness, trust assuredly, that God will enable you, by this manner of walking, to do every thing that is necessary for his glory, and your own everlasting salvation; and that he will graciously accept of that obedience through Christ which you are enabled to perform according to the measure of your faith,

T

and

and pardon your failings, though you offend in many things, and fall short of many others, as to degrees of holiness and high acts of obedience. And therefore attempt not the performance of duty in any other way, tho' you cannot yet attain to do so much as you would in this way. This is a necessary instruction to establish us in the life of faith, that the sense of our manifold failings and defects may not move us either to despair, or to return to the use of carnal principles and means, for help against our corruptions, as accounting this way of living and acting by faith, to be insufficient for our sanctification and salvation. The apostle *Paul* exhorts the *Galatians* to walk in the Spirit, though the flesh lusts against the Spirit, so that they cannot do the things that they would ^p. We are to know, that tho' the law requireth of us the utmost perfection of holiness, yet the gospel maketh an allowance for our weakness, and Christ is so meek and lowly in heart, that he accepteth of that which our weak faith can attain to by his grace, and doth not exact or expect any more of us for his glory and our salvation, until we grow stronger in grace. God shewed his great indulgence to his people under the Old Testament, that Moses the lawgiver suffered them, because of the hardness of their hearts, to put away their wives, though from the beginning it was not so ^q; and also in tolerating the customary practice of polygamy. Though Christ will not tolerate the continuance of such practices in his church, since his Spirit is more plentifully poured

^p Gal. v. 16, 17.^q Matt. xix. 8.

poured forth under the gospel; yet he is as forward as ever, to bear with the failings of his weak faints that desire to obey him sincerely. We have another instance of God's indulgence, more full to our present purpose, in his commanding, that the fearful and faint-hearted should not be forced to enter into battle against their enemies, but suffered to return home to their houses; tho' fighting in battle against their enemies, without fear and faintheartedness, was a duty that God did much exercise his people in, at that time^r. So, under the gospel, tho' it be an eminent part of Christ's service, to endure the greatest fight of afflictions, and death itself, courageously, for his name's sake; yet, if any be so weak in faith, that they have not sufficient courage to venture into the battle, no doubt but Christ alloweth them to make use of any honest means whereby they may escape the hands of persecutors, with safety to their holy profession. He will accept them in this weaker kind of service, and will approve of them better, than if they should hazard a denial of his name, by venturing themselves upon the trial of martyrdom, when they might have escaped it. Peter came off with sin and shame, by venturing, beyond the measure of his faith, into the hands of his persecutors, when he went after Christ to the High Priest's hall; whereas he should rather have made use of that indulgent dismissal that Christ gave to him and the rest of his disciples; Let these go their way^s. Christ dealeth with

T 2

his

^r Deut. xx. 3, 8.^s John xviii. 8.

his people as a good careful shepherd, that will not over-drive his sheep: " he shall gather the " lambs with his arm, and carry them in his bosom, " and shall gently lead those that are with young !." He would not have his disciples urged rigorously upon the duty of fasting when their spirits were unfit for it; because he knew, that imposing duties above their strength, is like putting a piece of new cloth into an old garment, and new wine into old bottles; which spoileth all at last ^u. That precept of Solomon, Be not righteous overmuch ^w, is very useful and necessary, if rightly understood. * We are to beware of being too rigorous in exacting righteousness of ourselves and others, beyond the measure of faith and grace. Overdoing commonly proveth undoing. Children that venture on their feet beyond their strength, have many a fall; and so have babes in Christ, when they venture unnecessarily upon such duties as are beyond the strength of their faith. We should be content, at present, to do the best that we can, according to the measure of the gift of Christ, tho' we know, that others are enabled to do much better; and we are not to despise the day of small things, but to praise God, that he worketh in us any thing that is well pleasing in his sight, hoping that he will sanctify us throughout, and bring us at last to perfection of holiness through Jesus Christ our Lord. And we should carefully observe, in all things, that good lesson of the apostle, " not to think of our-
" selves

^t Isa. xl. 11. ^u Matt. ix. 14, 15, 16, 17, ^w Eccl. vii. 16.

“ selves more highly than we ought to think ; but
 “ to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to
 “ every man the measure of faith *.”

DIRECTION XIII.

Endeavour diligently to make the right use of all means appointed in the word of God, for the obtaining and practising holiness, only in this way of believing in Christ, and walking in him, according to your new state by faith.

EXPLICATION.

THIS might have been added to the instructions in the explication of the former direction, because its use is the same, to guide us in the mysterious manner of practising holiness in Christ, by the life of faith ; but the weight and comprehensiveness of it, maketh it worthy to be treated of by itself, as a distinct direction. Two things are observable in it.

First, That tho’ all holiness be effectually attained by the life of faith in Christ, yet the use of any means appointed in the word for attaining and promoting holiness, is not hereby made void, but rather established. This is needful to be observed against the pride and ignorance of some carnal gospellers, who, being puffed up with a conceit of their feigned faith, imagine themselves to be in such a state of perfection, that they are above all ordinances, except singing hallelujahs ; and also against

T 3

th

* Rom. xii. 3.

the papists, that run into the contrary extreme, by heaping together a multitude of means of holiness which God never commanded, neither ever came they into his heart, and that slander the protestant doctrine of faith and free grace, as if it tended to destroy all diligent use of the means of holiness and salvation, and to breed up a company of lazy Solidians. We do indeed assert and profess, that a true and lively faith in Christ is alone sufficient and effectual, through the grace of God, to receive Christ and all his fulness, so far as is necessary in this life, for our justification, sanctification, and eternal salvation; but yet we also assert, and profess, that several means are appointed of God for the begetting, maintaining and increasing this faith, and the acting and exercising it, in order to the attainment of its end; and that these means are to be used diligently, which are mentioned in the sequel. True believers find by experience, that their faith needeth such helps: and they that think themselves above any need of them, do reject the counsel of God against themselves, like to those proud pharisees and lawyers, that thought it a thing beneath them, and refused to be baptized of John ^v. Yet we account no means necessary or lawful to be used for the attainment of holiness, besides those that are appointed by God in his word. We know, that holiness is a part of our salvation; and therefore they that think men may, or can invent any means effectually for the attainment of it, do ascribe their salvation partly to men, and rob God of

of his glory in being our only Saviour; and they do thereby plainly shew, that though they *draw nigh unto God with their mouth, and honour him with their lips; yet their hearts are far from him. And in vain do they worship him, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men*^z.

The SECOND thing observable, and principally designed, in this direction, is, *the right manner of using all the means of holiness*, for the obtaining and practising it in no other way besides that of believing in Christ, and walking in him, according to our new state by faith; which hath been already demonstrated to be the only way whereby we may effectually attain to this great end. We must use them as helps to the life of faith, in its beginning, continuance, and growth; and as instruments subservient to faith, the principal instrument, in all its acts and exercises, whereby the soul receiveth Christ, and walketh in all holiness by him. We must beware, lest we use them rather in opposition than in subordination to the way of sanctification and salvation by free grace in Christ, through faith; and lest, by our abuse of them, they be made rather hindrances, than helps to our faith. We must not idolize any of the means, and put them into the place of Christ, as the papists do, by trusting in them; as if they were effectual to confer grace to the soul, by the work that is done in the use of them. Neither may we use them as works of righteousness, to be performed as conditions

T 4

^z Matt. xv. 7, 8, 9.

ditions for the procuring the favour of God, and the salvation of Christ. Neither must they be accounted so absolutely necessary to salvation: as if a true faith were void, and of none effect, when we are debarred from the enjoyment of several of them. The holy scriptures, with all the means of grace appointed therein, are able to make us wise unto salvation, no other way than by faith in Jesus Christ^a. And therefore our wise endeavour must be, not to use them in any opposition to the grace of God in Christ. For God's ordinances are like the cherubims of glory, made with their faces looking towards the mercy seat. They are made to guide us to Christ for salvation by faith alone. If any turn them to another use, it is a great violation of divine institutions; as if any sacrilegious person had presumed to turn the faces of the cherubims from the mercy-seat some other way. This right use of the means of grace, is a point wherein many are ignorant, that use them with great zeal and diligence; and thereby they do not only lose their labour, and the benefit of the means, but also they wrest and pervert them to their own destruction. The Jews under the law of Moses, enjoyed many more ordinances of divine worship than we do under the gospel; but their table became their snare, and they fell miserably from God and Christ, because the *veil of ignorance was upon their hearts*, that they could not look to the end of those ordinances, even to the Lord Jesus Christ; and they sought not salvation by faith, but by the ordinances, as works
of

^a 2 Tim. iii. 15.

of righteousness, and by other works of the law ; for *they stumbled at the stumbling stone* ^b. That you may not stumble and fall by the same pernicious error, I shall shew particularly how several of the principal means of holiness appointed in the word of God, are to be made use of in that right manner expressed in the direction.

1. We must endeavour diligently to *know* the word of God contained in the holy scripture, and to improve it to this end, that we may be made wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus ^c. Other means of salvation are necessary to the more abundant well-being of our faith, and that of our new state in Christ ; but this is absolutely necessary to the very being thereof : because faith cometh by hearing the word of God, and receiveth Christ as manifested by the word ; as I have before proved. Rahab the Canaanite was justified by faith, before she had any visible communion with the church in any of God's ordinances ; yet not without the word of God, even the same word, for substance, which was written in the scriptures, and was then extant in the books of Moses ; tho' that word was not brought to her by any book of holy scripture, nor by the preaching of any holy minister, but by the report of the heathens ^d. But here our great work must be, to get such a knowledge of the word as is necessary and sufficient to guide us in receiving Christ, and walking in him by faith. You must not be of their minds that think the knowledge of the ten commandments to be sufficient to salvation,
or

^b Rom. ix. 31, 32. & x. 4, 5. ^c 2 Cor. iii. 13, 14.
^d 2 Tim. iii. 15. ^d Josh. ii. 9, 11.

or that would have mysteries to remain hid from the understanding of the vulgar, and nothing to be preached to them but what they can readily assent to, and receive by the light that is in all men; of which mind, it may be, some ministers are, who unwittily agree with the quakers in a fundamental of their heresy. But you must endeavour chiefly, to know the mystery of the Father and the Son, as it is discovered in the gospel, wherein are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge^e; which to know, is *life eternal*; and the ignorance of it, is *death eternal*^f. You must know, that *Christ is the end of the law*^g; and therefore you must endeavour to know the commands of the law; not that you may be enabled, by that knowledge, to practise them immediately, and so to procure salvation by your works; but rather, by your knowledge of them, you may be made sensible of your inability to perform them, and of the enmity that is in your heart against them, and the wrath that you are under for breaking them, and the impossibility of being saved by your own works; that so you may fly to Christ for refuge, and trust only to the free grace of God for justification, and strength to fulfil the law acceptably through Christ in your conversation. And, for this end, you must endeavour to learn the utmost strictness of the commands, the exact perfection and spiritual purity which they require, that you may be the more convinced of sin, and stirred up to seek unto Christ for remission of sin, for purity of heart, and spiritual obedience, and
be

^e Col. ii. 2, 3. ^f John xvii. 3. ^g 2 Cor. iv. 3. ^h Rom. x. 4.

be brought nearer to the enjoyment of him; as Christ testified, that the Scribe, who understood the greatness of that command of *loving the Lord with all the heart and soul*, was not far from the kingdom of God ^h. The most effectual knowledge for your salvation, is, to understand these two points; the desperate sinfulness and misery of your own natural condition, and the alone sufficiency of the grace of God in Christ for your salvation; that you may be abased as to the flesh, and exalted in Christ alone. And, for the better understanding these two main points, you should learn how the first Adam was the figure of the second ⁱ; how sin and death came upon all the natural seed of the first Adam, by his disobedience in eating the forbidden fruit, and how righteousness and everlasting life come upon all the spiritual seed of the second Adam, Jesus Christ, by his obedience unto death, even the death of the cross. You also should learn the true difference between the two covenants, the old and the new, or the law and the gospel: that the former shutteth us up under the guilt and power of sin, and the wrath of God and his curse, by its rigorous terms, “Do all the commandments, and live;” and “Curse are you, if you do them not, and fail in the least point;” the latter openeth the gates of righteousness and life to all believers (that is, the new covenant) by its gracious terms, “Believe in the Lord Jesus Christ, and live, that is, All your sins shall be forgiven, and holiness and glory shall be given to you freely by his merit and Spirit.”

Further-

^h Matt. xii. 34.

ⁱ Rom. v. 14.

Furthermore, you should learn the gospel principles that you are to walk by, for the attainment of holiness in Christ. And here I shall mind you particularly, that you would be a good proficient in christian learning, if you get a good understanding of the vith and viith chapters of the apostle Paul to the Romans; where the powerful principles of sanctification are purposely treated of, and differenced from those weak and ineffectual principles which we are most naturally prone to walk by. I need not particularly commend any other points of religion to your learning; for, if you get the knowledge of these principal points which I have mentioned, and improve it to a right end, which is, to live and walk by faith in Christ, your own renewed mind will covet the knowledge of all other things that appertain to life and godliness; and, if in any thing you be otherwise minded than is according to saving truth, *God shall reveal even this unto you*^k. Yet let me caution you, lest, instead of gaining Christ by your knowledge, you rather lose him by putting your knowledge in the place of Christ, and trusting to it for your salvation. One cause of the Jews perishing was, that they rested in a form of knowledge, and of the truth in the law^l. And, doubtless, all that many christians will gain by their knowledge in the end, will only be, to be beaten with more stripes; because they place their religion and salvation chiefly in the knowledge of their Lord's will, and in their ability to talk and dispute of it, without preparing themselves to do ac-

cording

^k Phil. iii. 15. ^l Rom. ii. 20.

ording thereunto ^m. Much less are you to place your religion, and hope of salvation, in a daily task of reading chapters, or repeating sermons, without understanding more than the Papists do their lessons in the Latin mass, and canonical hours; as sad experience sheweth, that many seemingly devout and frequent hearers of the word, do notwithstanding remain in lamentable and wonderful ignorance of the saving truth. And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, “ that, in hearing, they shall hear “ and not understand: and, in seeing, they shall “ see, &c. ⁿ.

2. Another means to be used diligently for the promoting the life of faith, is, *examination* of our state and ways according to the word; whether we be, at present, in a state of sin and wrath, or of grace and salvation; that, if we be in a state of sin, we may know our sickness, and come to the great Physician, while it is called to day; and, if we be in a state of grace, we may know that we are of the truth, and assure our hearts before God with the greater confidence, by the testimony of a good conscience ^o; that so our hearts may be more strongly comforted by faith, and established in every good work; and that, if our ways be evil, we may turn from them to the Lord our God through Christ; without whom none cometh to the Father ^p. But your great care, in this work of self-examination, must be, to perform it in such a manner, that it may not hinder and destroy the life of faith, as it doth

^m Luke xii. 47. ⁿ Matt. xiii. 14, 15. ^o 1 John
iii. 19, 21. ^p Lam. iii. 40. John xiv. 6:

doth in many instead of promoting it. Therefore beware, lest you trust upon your self-examination, rather than upon Christ; as some do, that think they have made their peace with God, merely because they have examined themselves upon their sickness, or before the receiving of the Lord's supper, though they have found themselves stark naught, and do not depend on Christ, to make them better, but on their own deceitful purposes and resolutions. Think not, that you must begin this work with doubting whether God will extend mercy to you, and save you; and that you must leave this a question wholly under debate, until you have found out how to resolve it by self-examination. This is a common and very pernicious error in the very foundation of this work, which is hereby laid in the great sin of unbelief; which, as soon as it prevail-eth, doth by its great influence, dash and obscure all inward gracious qualifications of peace, hope, joy, love to God and his people, before they be at all tried, whether they can give any good evidence for their salvation. And it makes people willing to think their own qualifications better than they are, lest they should fall into an utter despair of their salvation: and thus it wholly marreth the good work of self-examination, and maketh it destructive to our souls; for to them that are defiled and unbelieving, there is nothing pure⁹. You should rather begin the work with much assurance of faith, that tho' you may at present find your heart never so wicked and reprobate, (as many of
God's

⁹ Tit. i. 15.

God's choicest servants have found), yet the door of mercy is open for you, and that God will certainly save you for ever, if you put your trust in his grace thro' Christ. I have formerly shewed, that this confident persuasion is of the nature of saving faith, (and that we have sufficient ground for it in the free promises of the gospel, when we walk in darkness, and can see no light shining forth in our gracious qualifications. If we begin the work with this confidence, it will make us impartial and not afraid to find out the worst of ourselves, and willing to judge, that our hearts are deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked, beyond what we can find out^r. And, if we have any holy qualifications, this confidence will preserve them in their vigour and brightness, that they may be able to give clear evidence, that we are at present in a state of grace. Mark well the difference between these two questions, Whether God will graciously accept and save me, though a vile sinner, through Christ; as before was said? and, Whether I am already brought into a state of salvation? The former of these, I say, is to be resolved affirmatively by a confident faith in Christ; the latter only is to be inquired into by self-examination. Mispending not your time, as many do, in poring upon your hearts, to find whether you be good enough to trust on Christ for your salvation, or to find whether you have any faith, before you dare be so bold as to act faith in Christ. But know, that tho' you cannot find that you have any faith or holiness,

^r Jer. xvii. 9.

liness, yet, if you will now believe on him that justifieth the ungodly, it shall be accounted to you for righteousness^s. And, if you love Christ and your own soul, mispend not your time in examining whether you have committed the unpardonable sin against the Holy Ghost, except it be with a full purpose, to assure yourself more and more, that you are not guilty thereof; for any doubtfulness in this point, will but harden you in unbelief. Remember well, that the question to be resolved, is, whether you be at present in a state of grace? and, to resolve it, you must be willing to know the best of yourself as well as the worst: and you must not think, that humility bindeth you to overlook your good qualifications, and to take notice only of your corruptions. But your great work must be, to find whether there be not some drop of saving grace in the ocean of your corruption? And it will consist well with humility, to take notice of, and own any spark of true holiness that is in you; because the praise and glory of it belongeth not to you, but to God^t. And you must try inherent grace by the touch-stone, not by the measure; by its nature, not its degree; not denying any lustings of the Spirit in you, because of the strong lustings of the flesh against the Spirit; nor denying that you are spiritual in some degree, and babes in Christ, because you find yourselves carnal in a more prevailing degree, and the old man bigger than the new^u. Especially, you are to examine and prove, whether you be in the faith? For, if you make
sure

^s Rom. iv. 5.
ⁱ Cor. ii. 1.

^t Phil. i. 11.

^u Gal. v. 17.

sure of this you make sure of all the things that pertain to life and godliness; and, if you doubt of this, you will certainly doubt of the truth of any other qualifications, and will suspect them to be merely carnal and counterfeit; because it is a known truth, that to the unbelieving there is nothing pure, and that all that have not truly received Christ by faith, are at present in an unregenerate state, though they seem never so pure and godly ^w. And let not the issue of this trial depend at all upon your knowledge of the time when, or of the sermon, conference, or place of scripture, by which you were first converted to the faith; though that is good to know too, if it may be. And some who have formerly lived in gross ignorance, or in a manifest opposition to true faith and holiness, may know such circumstances of their conversion, and may reflect upon them comfortably, as the apostle Paul did, who was turned of a sudden, from his persecuting rage, to be a disciple and an apostle of Christ; yet others, sincere believers, may be wholly ignorant of them, as John the Baptist, who was filled with the Holy Ghost from his mother's womb ^x; and they that have been trained up religiously, and know the holy scripture from their childhood, as Timothy ^y; yea, and many that are first turned from gross ignorance and profaneness, to some external reformation, and then, in process of time, brought nearer to the kingdom of heaven, by insensible degrees, before they be really new-begotten by the

U

spirit

^w 2 Cor. xiii. 5. Tit. i. 15, ^x Luke i. 15, ^y 2 Tim. iii. 15.

spirit of faith. There are also some that deceive their souls, by imagining, they know, at what time, and by what text of scripture, they were converted, and can make large discourses of the workings of God upon their hearts, and are prone to talk unseasonably, with vain glorying, of their own experiences; when, at last, all their experiences are not sufficient to evidence, that they ever attained to the least measure of true saving faith.

Therefore, that we may not unjustly condemn or justify our faith, by proceeding on insufficient evidences in its trial, our best way is, to examine it by the inseparable properties of a true saving faith, by putting to ourselves such questions as these: Are we made thoroughly sensible of our sinfulness, and of the deadness and misery of our natural state, so as to despair absolutely of ever attaining to any righteousness, holiness, or true happiness, while we continue in it? are the eyes of our understanding enlightened, to see the excellency of Christ, and the alone sufficiency and all-sufficiency of his grace for our salvation? Do we prefer the enjoyment of him above all things, and desire it with our whole heart, as our only happiness, whatsoever we may suffer for his sake? Do we desire with our whole heart, to be delivered from the power and practice of sin, as well as from the wrath of God, and the pains of hell? do our hearts come to Christ, and lay hold on him for salvation, by trusting him only, and endeavouring to trust on him confidently, notwithstanding all fears and doubts that assault us? If you find in yourself a faith that hath these properties, though as small as a grain of mustard seed, and opposed

posed with much unbelief and manifold corruptions in your soul, you may conclude, that you are in a state of salvation at present, and that your remaining work is, to continue and grow in it more and more, and to walk worthy of it. You should also examine the fruits of your faith, and try whether you can *shew your faith by your works*, as you are taught^z; that you may be sure not to be deceived in your judgment concerning it. And though it be true, as I have noted, that doubts concerning your faith will breed doubting concerning the sincerity of other qualifications that are fruits thereof; yet possibly you may get such clear evidences of your sincerity, as may overcome and expel all your doubts. And here you are not only to inquire, whether your inclinations, purposes, affections, and actions, be materially good and holy; but also, by what principles they are bred and influenced? whether it be by slavish fears of hell, and mercenary hopes of getting heaven by your works, which are legal and carnal principles that can never breed true holiness; or by gospel principles, as by love to God, because God hath loved you first, and to Christ, because he hath died; and by the hope of eternal life, as the free gift of God through Christ, and dependence on God, to sanctify you by his Spirit according to his promises? Remember, that the New Testament is the ministration of the Spirit^a; and the Spirit will sanctify us, not by legal, but by gospel principles. Take notice farther, that you need not trouble yourself, to find out a multitude of marks and signs

U 2

of

^z Jam. ii. 18.^a 2 Cor. iii. 6.

of true grace, if you can find a few good ones. Particularly, you may know, that *you are passed from death to life*, if you love the brethren^b. That is, if you love all whom you can in charity judge to be true believers, and that because they are true believers, and for the truth's sake, that dwelleth in them. As Solomon discerned the true mother of the child, by her affection towards her child; so the mother-grace of faith may be discerned by the love that it breeds in us towards all true believers. To conclude this point, happy are you if you can find so much evidence of the fruits of your faith, as may enable you to express your sincerity in these moderate terms, "Pray for us: for we trust we have a good conscience, in all things willing to live honestly^c."

3. *Meditation* on the word of God is of very great use and advantage for the attainment and practice of holiness through faith in Christ. It is a duty whereby the soul doth feed and ruminates upon the word as its spiritual food, and digesteth it, and turneth it into nourishment, whereby we are strengthened for every good work. Our souls are satisfied therewith, as with marrow and fatness: when we remember God upon our beds, and meditate on him in the night watches^d. The new nature may well be called the *mind*^e, because it liveth and acteth, by minding and meditating on spiritual things. Therefore it is a duty to be practised, not only at some limited times, but all the day^f; yea day and night^g; even in our ordinary employments at home and abroad. An habitual

^b 1 John iii. 14. ^c Heb. xiii. 18. ^d Psal. lxxiii.
5, 6. ^e Rom. vii. 25. ^f Psal. cxix. 97. ^g Psal. i. 2.

bitual knowledge of the word will not profit us, without an active minding it by frequent meditation. Some think, that much preaching of the word is not needful where a people are already brought to the knowledge of those things that are necessary to salvation. But they that are regenerated by the word, find by experience, that their spiritual life is maintained and increased by often minding the same word: and therefore, as *new born babes, they desire the sincere milk of the word, that they may grow thereby*^h; and would, by the preachers, be put often in remembrance of the same things, that they may feed upon them by meditation, though they know them already, and are *established in the present truth*ⁱ. But here our greatest skill and chiefest concernment lies, in practising this duty in such a manner, as that it may be subservient, and not at all opposite to the life of faith. We must not rely upon the performance of a daily task of meditation, as a work of righteousness for the procurement of the favour of God, instead of relying on the righteousness of Christ; as indeed we are prone to do, to catch at any straw, rather than to trust only on the free grace of God in Christ for our salvation. And the end of our meditation must not be mere speculation and knowledge of the truth, but rather the vigorous pressing it upon our consciences, and the stirring up our hearts and affections to the practice of it. And, in stirring up ourselves to holy practice, we must warily observe, how far the several parts of the truth of God are powerful and effectual for the

U 3

attainment

^h 1 Pet. ii. 2. ⁱ 2 Pet. i. 12.

attainment of this end, that we may make use of them accordingly. We must not imagine, as too many do, yea and some great masters in the art of meditation, that we can bring our hearts effectually to the love of God, and holiness, and can work strange alterations, and frame in our hearts any holy qualifications or virtue, merely by working in ourselves strong apprehensions of God's eternal power and God-head, his sovereign authority, omniscience, perfect holiness, exact justice, the equity of his law, and reasonableness of our obedience to it; the unspeakable happiness prepared for the godly, and misery for the wicked, to all eternity. Meditation on such things as these, is indeed very useful to press upon our consciences the strictness of our obligation to holy duties, and to move us to go by faith to Christ, for life and strength to perform them. But, that we may receive this life and strength, whereby we are enabled for immediate performance, we must meditate believingly on Christ's saving benefits, as they are discovered in the gospel; which is the only doctrine which is the power of God to our salvation, and whereby the quickening spirit is ministered to us, and that is able to build us up, and give us an inheritance among all them which are sanctified*. You must take special care to act faith in your meditation; mix the word of God's grace with it, or else it will not profit you¹. And, if you set the loving-kindness of God frequently before your eyes, by meditating on it believingly, you will be

* Rom. i. 16. 2 Cor. iii. 6. Acts xx. 32.
iv. 2.

¹ Heb.

be strengthened to walk in the truth ^m; and, by *beholding, as in a glass, the glory of the Lord, you will be changed into the same image, from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord* ⁿ. This kind of meditation is sweet and delightful to those that are guided to it by the Spirit of faith; and it needs not the help of such artificial methods as the vulgar cannot easily learn. You may let your thoughts run in it at liberty, without confining them to any rules of method. You will find your souls much enlivened by it, and enriched with the grace of God; which cannot be effected by any other kind of meditation though it be never so methodical, and curiously framed according to the rules of art.

4. The sacrament of baptism must needs be of great use to promote the life of faith, if it be made use of according to its nature and institution; because it is a seal of the righteousness of faith, as circumcision was formerly ^o. But then we must take heed of making it a seal of the contrary righteousness of works; as the carnal Jews did, that sought to be justified by the law of Moses; and as many christians do, that transform the new covenant into a covenant of works, requiring sincere obedience to all the laws of Christ, as the condition of our justification; into which new devised covenant they think themselves to be entered by their baptism. I may say of baptism thus perverted and abused as the apostle saith of circumcision, baptism verily profiteth, if thou keep the law: but, if thou be a breaker of

U 4

the

^m Psal. xxvi. 3. ⁿ 2 Cor. iii. 18. ^o Rom. iv. 11.

the law, thy baptism is made no baptism ^p. If thou be baptised, so long as thou continuest in the abuse of that holy ordinance, *Christ shall profit you nothing; Christ is become of none effect to you; ye are fallen from grace* ^q. Beware also of making an idol of baptism, and putting it in the place of Christ; as the Papists do, who hold, that it conferreth grace by the very work that is performed in the administration of it; and as many ignorant people do, that trust rather on their baptism, than on Christ; like the Pharisees, who placed their confidence on circumcision, and other external privileges ^r. We are to know, that God is not well pleased with many that are baptised ^s; and the time will come, when he will punish the baptised with the unbaptised, as well as the circumcised with the uncircumcised ^t. Beware also of advancing baptism to an equal partnership with faith in your salvation; as some do, who account all baptism null and void, besides that which is administered to persons grown up to years of discretion; and they that refuse to be rebaptised at those years, are to be accounted aliens from the true church, from Christ and his salvation, notwithstanding all their faith in Christ. If the baptism of infants were null and void; yet the want of true baptism would be no damning matter to those that are otherwise persuaded. *Circumcision* was as necessary as *baptism* in its time; and yet the Israelites omitted it for the space of forty years in the wilderness, without fearing, that any would fall short of
salva-

^p Rom. ii. 25.^q Gal. v. 2, 4.^r Phil. iii. 4, 5.^s 1 Cor. x. 2, 5.^t Jer. ix. 25.

salvation for want of it ^u. Many precious saints in the primitive times of persecution, have gone to heaven through a baptism of suffering for the name of Christ, before they had opportunity to be baptised with water. And, in those ancient times, when the custom of deferring baptism too much prevailed, we are not to think, that none were in a state of salvation by faith in Christ that deferred that ordinance, or neglected it. Take notice farther, that it is not sufficient to avoid the pernicious errors of those that pervert baptism, contrary to its institution; but you must be also diligent in improving it to the ends for which it was instituted. And here let me desire you to put the question seriously to your souls. What good use do you make of your baptism? how often, or seldom, do you think upon it? The vulgar sort of christians, yea, it may be feared, many sincere converts, do so little think upon their own baptism, and study to make a due improvement of it, that it is of no more profit to their souls, than if they never had been baptized; yea their sin is the more aggravated, by rendering such an ordinance of none effect to their souls, through their own gross neglect. Tho' baptism be administered to us but once in our lives; yet we ought frequently to reflect upon it, and upon all occasions to put the question to ourselves, Unto what were we baptized ^w? What does this ordinance seal? What did it engage us to? And accordingly we must stir up and strengthen ourselves, by our baptism, to lay hold on the grace which it seals to us, and to fulfil its engagements.

We

^u Josh. v. 6, 7.^w Acts xix. 3.

We should often remember, that we are made Christ's disciples by baptism, and engaged to hear him, rather than Moses, and to believe on him for our salvation ; as John baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying to the people, that they should believe on him that should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. We should remember, that our baptism sealed our putting on of Christ, and our being the children of God by faith in Christ, and our being no longer under the former schoolmaster the law ^x ; and that it sealed to us the putting off the body of sin, and our burial and resurrection with Christ by faith, and the forgiving of our trespasses ^y ; our being made members of one body, Christ, and to drink into one Spirit ^z. We may find by such things as these, which are more fully discovered in the gospel, that it is the proper nature and tendency of baptism, to guide us to faith in Christ alone for remission of sins, holiness, and all salvation, by union and fellowship with him ; and that a diligent improvement of this ordinance, must needs be of great advantage to the life of faith.

5. The sacrament of the *Lord's Supper* is as a spiritual feast to nourish our faith, and to strengthen us to walk in all holiness by Christ living and working in us, if it be used according to the pattern which Christ gave us in its first institution, recorded by three Evangelists ^a : and was extraordinarily revealed from heaven by Christ himself to the apostle Paul ;

^x Gal. iii. 25, 26, 27. ^y Col. ii. 12, 13. ^z 1 Cor. xii. 12, 13. ^a Matt. xxvi. 26, 27, 28. Mark. xiv. 22, 23, 24. Luke xxii. 19, 20.

Paul^b; that we might be the more obliged and stirred up to the exact observation of it. Its end is, not only that we may remember Christ's death in the history, but in the mystery of it: as, that his body was broken for us, that his blood is the blood of the New Testament or covenant shed for us, and for many, for the remission of sins; that so we may receive and enjoy all the promises of the new covenant which are recorded^c. Its end is, to mind us, that Christ's body and blood are bread and drink, even all-sufficient food to nourish our souls to everlasting life; and that we ought to take, and eat and drink him by faith; and to assure us, that, when we truly believe on him, he is as really and closely united to us by his Spirit, as the food which we eat and drink, is united to our bodies. Christ himself^d, doth more fully explain this mystery. Furthermore, this sacrament doth not only put us in mind of the spiritual blessings wherewith we are blessed in Christ, and our enjoyment of them by faith, but also it is a mean and instrument, whereby God doth really exhibit and give forth Christ and his salvation to true believers, and whereby he doth stir up, and strengthen believers, to receive and feed upon Christ by present actings of faith, while they partake of the outward elements. When Christ saith, *Eat, drink; this is my body, this is my blood*, no less can be meant, than that Christ doth as truly give his body and blood to true believers in that ordinance, as the bread and cup; and they do as truly

^b 1 Cor. xi. 23, 24, 25.

^c Heb. viii. 10, 11, 12.

^d John vi.

truly receive it by faith. As if a prince invest a subject in some honourable office, by delivering to him a staff, sword, or signet, and say to him, *Take this staff, sword, or signet ; this is such an office or preferment ;* or, if a Father should deliver a deed for conveyance of land to his son, and say, *Take it as thy own ; this is such a farm or manor ;* how can such expressions import any thing less, in common sense and reason, than a present, gift, and conveyance of the offices, preferments, and lands, by and with those outward signs ? Therefore the apostle Paul asserteth, that the bread in the Lord's supper, is the *communion of the body of Christ*, and the cup is the *communion of his blood* ; which sheweth, that Christ's body and blood are really communicated to us, and we do really partake of them, as well as of the bread and cup. The chief excellency and advantage of this ordinance is, that it is not only a figure and resemblance of our living upon a crucified Saviour, but also a precious instrument, whereby Christ, the bread and drink of life, is really conveyed to us, and received by us, through faith. This makes it to be a love-token, worthy of that ardent affection towards us, which filled Christ's heart at the time when he instituted it, when he was on the point of finishing his greatest work of love, by laying down his life for us ^f. And this is diligently to be observed, that we may make a right improvement of this ordinance, and receive the saving benefits of it. One reason why many do little esteem, and seldom or never partake of this ordinance

* 1 Cor. x. 16.

^f 1 Cor. xi. 23.

ordinance, and do find little benefit by it, is, because they falsely imagine that God in it only holds forth naked signs and resemblances of Christ and his salvation, which they account to be held forth so plainly in scripture, that they need not the help of such a sign; whereas, if they understood, that God doth really give Christ himself to their faith, by and with those signs and resemblances, they would prize it the most delicious feast, and be desirous to partake of it on all opportunities^z. Another reason why many partake seldom or never of this ordinance, and know little of the benefit of it, is, because they think themselves brought by it into great danger of eating and drinking their own damnation: according to those terrifying words of the apostle, *For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body*^h. Therefore they account it the safest way, wholly to abstain from such a dangerous ordinance, or, at least, that once a year is enough to run so great a hazard. And, if they be brought to it sometimes by constraint of conscience, their slavish fears bereave them of all comfortable fruit of it. So that, instead of striving to receive Christ and his salvation therein, they account themselves to have succeeded well, if they come off without the sentence of damnation: as the Jewish Rabbies write, that the High Priest's life was so eminently hazarded by his entering once a year into the holy of holies, that he staid there as little time as he could, lest the people should

^z Aët. ii. 42. & xx. 7. ^h 1 Cor. xi. 29.

should think him to be struck dead by the hand of God; and, when he was come forth alive, he usually made a feast of thanksgiving for joy of so great a deliverance. But there is no reason why we should be so much terrified by those words of the apostle; for they were darted against such a gross profanation of the Lord's supper among the Corinthians as we may easily avoid, by observing the institution of it, which the apostle proposeth to them as a sufficient remedy against the gross abuse, in not discerning or differencing the Lord's body from other bodily food, and partaking of it as their own supper, with such disorder, that one was hungry, and another drunken. Besides that terrifying word *damnation*, may be rendered more mildly *judgment*, as it is in the margin; yea the apostle himselfⁱ, doth interpret it of a merciful, temporal judgment, whereby we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world. We are indeed prone to sin, in receiving this ordinance unworthily; and so we are also to pollute, more or less, all other holy things that we meddle with. So that the consideration of our danger might fill us with slavish fear in the use of all other means of grace, as well as of this, were it not that we have a great High Priest, to bear this iniquity of our holy things,^k under the covert of whose righteousness we are to draw near unto God, without slavish fear, in the full assurance of faith, in this as well as in other holy ordinances; and we are to rejoice in the Lord in this spiritual feast, as the Jews

were

ⁱ Ver. 22.^k Exod. xxviii. 38.

were bound to do in their solemn feast¹. There are other abuses of this ordinance like to those of baptism forementioned, whereby it is rendered opposite, rather than subservient to the life of faith. Some put it in the place of Christ, by trusting on it as a work of righteousness, for the procuring of God's favour, or an ordinance sufficient to confer grace to the soul by the very work wrought. Others make it so necessary, that they account faith is not sufficient without it; and therefore they will partake of it, if they can possibly, though it be in a disorderly manner, upon their sick beds, when they are in fear of death, as their viaticum. The Papists do horribly idolize it by their figment of transubstantiation, and the adoration of their breaden God, and their sacrifice of the mass for the sins of the quick and the dead. We ought warily to conceive, that the true body and blood of Christ are given to us with the bread and wine, in a spiritual mysterious manner, by the unsearchable operation of the Holy Spirit, uniting Christ and us together by faith, without any transubstantiation in the outward elements.

6. *Prayer* is to be made use of as a means of living by faith in Christ, according to the new man. And it is the making our requests with supplication and thanksgiving. That it is to be used so, as an eminent means, appears, because God requireth it^m; it is our priestly workⁿ, and the property of saints^o; and God is a God hearing prayer,

¹ Deut. xvi. 14, 15. ^m 1 Thess. v. 17. Rom. xii. 12.

ⁿ 1 Pet. ii. 5, compared with Psal. cxli. 2. ^o 1 Cor. i. 2.

prayer^p. God will be prayed to by his people, for the benefit that he is minded to bestow upon them, when once he had enabled them to pray; though at first he is found of them that seek him not^q; that he may prepare them for thanksgiving, and make benefits double benefits to them^r. Though his will be not changed by this means; yet it is accomplished, ordinarily, and his purpose is to accomplish it this way. And therefore, trusting assuredly should not make us neglect, but rather perform this duty^s. Christ the mediator of the new covenant, by which justification and sanctification are promised, is also the mediator for acceptance of our prayers^t. The Spirit that sanctifieth us, begetteth us in Christ, and sheweth the things of Christ to us, is a Spirit of prayer^u. He is as fire inflaming the soul, and making it to mount upward in prayer to God. Prayerless people are dead to God. If they are children of Zion, yet they are but still-born, dead children that cry not^x; not written among the living in Jerusalem; heathens in nature, though christians in name^y. It is a duty so great, that it is put for all the service of God, as a fundamental duty, which if it be done, the rest will be done well, and not without it; and other ordinances of worship are helps to it^z. It is the great means whereby faith doth exert itself to perform its whole work, and poureth itself forth in all holy desires and affections,

^p Psal. lxxv. 2. ^q Ezek. xxxvi. 37. Phil. i. 19, 20.

^r Psal. lxxvi. 16, 18, 19. & l. 15. ² Cor. i. 10, 11.

^s 2 Sam. vii. 27. ^t Heb. iv. 15, 16. ^u Zech. xii. 10.

Gal. iv. 6. ^x Acts ix. 11. ^y Jer. x. 25. ^z Isa. lvi. 7.

affections^a; and so yields a sweet savour, as Mary's box of precious spikenard^b; and so the same promises are made to faith and prayer^c. It is our continual incense and sacrifice, whereby we offer ourselves, our hearts, affections, and lives, to God^d. We act all grace in it; and must act it this way, or else we are not likely to act it any other way. And as we act grace, so we obtain grace by it, and all holiness^e. Our riches come in by it, Israel prevails while Moses holds up his hands^f. By prayer Hannah is strengthened against her sorrows^g; peace is continued^h; the disordered soul is set in order by it, as Hannahⁱ. Incense was still burnt, while the lamps were dressed^k. It is added to the spiritual armour, not as a particular piece of it, but as a means of putting on all, and making use of all aright, that we may stand in the evil day^l. It is a means of transfiguring us into the likeness of Christ in holiness, and making our spiritual faces to shine, as Christ was transfigured bodily, whilst he prayed^m; and Moses's face shone whilst he talked with Godⁿ. Hence the frequent use of this duty is commended to us^o. Praying always, *πᾶν χρόνον*, on all seasons and opportunities; and, by the example of the saints, in public with the congregation^p. Solemn acts of prayer should be continued daily^q, yea, se-

X

veral

^a Psal. lxii. 8. ^b Mark xiv. 3. John xii. 3. ^c Rom. x. 11, 12, 13. ^d Psal. cxli. 2. ^e Psal. cxxxviii. 3. Luke xi. 13. Heb. iv. 16. Psal. lxxxi. 10. ^f Exod. xvii. 11. ^g 1 Sam. i. 15, 18. ^h Phil. iv. 6, 7. ⁱ 1 Sam. i. 18. Psal. xxxii. 1—5. ^k Exod. xxx. 7, 8. ^l Eph. vi. 18. ^m Luke ix. 29. ⁿ Exod. xxxiv. 29. ^o Eph. vi. 18. ^p Acts ii. 42. & x. 30, 31. ^q Matt. vi. 11.

veral times in a day, as morning and evening sacrifice^r; or thrice^a; besides special occasions^t; and brief ejaculations, that hinder not other business^u. Prayers should be solemn, in our closets^w; in families^x. And as sacrifices were multiplied on the Sabbath-days, and days of atonement, and at other appointed seasons^y, besides the continual burnt-offering; so ought prayer also. In a word, a christian ought to give up himself eminently to this duty^z; without limits^a. But the great work is, to practise this duty rightly for holiness, only by faith in Christ. Here we had need say, Lord, teach us to pray^b; and that not only as to the matter, but as to the manner; both which are taught by Christ, in some measure, in that brief pattern of prayer which he taught his disciples. But for the understanding of it, we must consult the whole word^c. And we have need of the Spirit of Christ to guide us in the duty; and therefore we are taught to pray by the Spirit, that is, the Holy Ghost^d. The Spirit of God only guideth and directeth our souls to pray aright. And, that you may do so, take these rules.

(1.) You must pray with your *hearts and spirit*^e, where the Spirit of Christ, and of prayer, principally resides^f; with understanding^g; for we are renewed
in

^r Dan. vi. 10. Psal. xcii. 2. ^a Psal. lv. 17. ^t Jam. v. 13, 14. ^u Psal. cxxix. 8. ² Sam. xv. 31. ^v Neh. ii. 4. ^w Matt. vi. 6. ^x Acts x. 30, 31. ^y Numb. xxviii. ^z Psal. cix. 4. ^a Psal. cxix. 164. ^b Luke xi. 1. ^c 2 Tim. iii. 16, 17. ^d Jude ver. 20. Eph. ii. 18. ^e Isa. xxvi. 9. John iv. 24. ^f Gal. iv. 6. Eph. iii. 17. ^g 1 Cor. xiv. 15, 16.

in knowledge ^h; so that praying in ignorance cannot sanctify. And it must be with sincere hearty desire of the good things we ask in prayer; for God seeth the heart ^l. Prayer is chiefly a heart-work ^k. God heareth the heart without the mouth, but never heareth the mouth acceptably without the heart ^l. Your prayer is odious hypocrisy, mocking of God, and taking his name in vain, when you utter petitions for the coming of his kingdom, and doing of his will, and yet hate godliness in your heart. This is lying to God, and flattering with your lips, but no true prayer: and so God takes it ^m. And you must have a sense of your wants and necessities, and that God only can supply them ⁿ. And fervency in those desires is required ^o. And you must pray with attention, minding yourselves what you pray, or else you cannot expect that God should mind it ^p. Watch unto it ^q. Set yourselves to this duty intently. God seeth where your heart is wandering, when you pray without attention ^r. When you say never so many prayers without understanding, attention, affection, it is not praying at all, but sinning, and playing the hypocrite; as Papists mumble over their Latin prayers upon the beads by tale, prating like parrots what they cannot understand. And thus ignorant people say over their forms of English prayers, and account they have well discharged their duty, though their heart prayed

X 2

not

^h Col. iii. 10. ² Pet. i. 3. ^l Psal. lxii. 8. ^k Psal. xxvii. 8. ¹ 1 Sam. i. 13. ^m Psal. lxxviii. 36.
ⁿ 2 Chron. xx. 12. ^o Jam. v. 16. ^p Dan. ix. 3.
^q 1 Pet. iv. 7. ^r Ezek. xxxiii. 31.

not at all, and they were minding other things. This is a mere lip-labour, and bodily exercise, offering a dead carcase to God; plain deceit^s; a form of godliness, with denying the power^t; whereby Popery hath cheated the world of the power of this, and all other holy ordinances. They say, God minds and knows what they speak, and approves it. I answer, He sees them so as to judge them for hypocrites, and profane persons, for not knowing, minding, and approving what they utter themselves: he hath no pleasure in fools^u. They would not deal so with an earthly prince.

(2.) You must pray *in the name of Christ*: for the spirit glorifies Christ^w; and leadeth us to God thro' Christ^x. As I have shewed, that walking in the Spirit, and walking in Christ, is all one; so praying in the Spirit, and by and through Christ. And as we are to walk in the name of the Lord, and to do all things in his name, so to pray in his name, as is commanded^y. It is not enough to conclude our prayers, *through Jesus Christ our Lord*; but we must come for blessings in the garments of our elder brother, and must depend upon his worthiness and strength for all. So also we must praise God for all things in his name, as things received for his sake, and by him^z. We must lay hold on his strength only, and plead nothing, and own nothing, for our acceptance, but him. We must not plead our own works arrogantly, like the proud Pharisee^a, except only as fruits of grace, and rewards of grace^b.

Praying

^s Mal. i. 13, 14. ^t 2 Tim. iii. 5. ^u Eccles. v. 1, 4.
^w John xvi. 14. ^x Eph. ii. 18. ^y John xiv. 13, 14.
^z Eph. v. 20. ^a Luke xviii. 11, 12. ^b Isa. xxxviii. 3.

Praying in the Spirit is upon gospel, not legal principles ^c; with great humiliation, and sense of unworthiness ^c; with a broken spirit; with despair of acceptance, otherwise than upon Christ's account ^e. If your enlargements, strugglings, meltings, have been never so great; yet without this all is abominable.

(3.) Hence you must not think to be *accepted* for the goodness of your prayers, and *trust* on them as works of righteousness; which is making idols of your prayers, and putting them into the place of Christ; quite contrary to praying in the name of Christ. Thus Papists hope to be saved by saying their tale of prayers upon their bead-rows; and they have indulgences granted upon their saying so many prayers, and of such a sort. Yea some ignorant Protestants trust on their prayers as duties of righteousness; and they think one prayer to be more acceptable than another, by reason of the holiness of the form, if it were made by holy men; especially the Lord's prayer, which they use to help them in any exigence or danger; how little soever they can apply it to their own case, they make an idol of it. And some use it, and other places of scripture, as a ^dcharm, to drive away the devil. And others think their prayers more acceptable in one place than in another, by reason of the holiness of the place ^f. Others trust on their much speaking ^g; which they call the enlarging of their hearts. They think to put off God, and stop the mouth of conscience,

X 3

^c Rom. vii. 6. ² Cor. iii. 3. ^d Psal. li. ^e Dan. ix. 18. ^f John iv. 21, 24. ¹ Tim. ii. 8. ^g Matt. vi. 7

science, with a few prayers, and so to live as they list.

(4.) Pray to God as your *Father*, through Christ as your *Saviour*, in faith of remission of sins, and your acceptance with God, and the obtaining all other things which you desire of him, as far as is necessary for your salvation ^h. This is praying in Christ ⁱ; and by the Holy Ghost, the Spirit of adoption ^k. Without this, prayer is lifeless and heartless, and but a dead carcass ^l. By this you may judge whether you have prayed rightly, more than by your melting affection, or largeness in expression. Though you be not assured that you shall have every thing that you ask, yet every thing that is good. This faith you must endeavour to act; and therefore, if any sin lie on your conscience, you must strive first to get the pardon of it ^m; and purification of it by faith, that you may lift up holy hands, without wrath and doubting ⁿ. The sin of wrath there is especially mentioned, because that is contrary to love, and forgiving others. Here lies the strength, life and powerfulness of prayer. Set faith on work, and you will be powerful, and prevail.

(5.) You must strive, in prayer, to stir up and act every other sanctifying grace, through faith moving you thereto. Thus your spikenards will yield their smell; as, godly sorrow ^o; peace ^p; joy

^h Jam. i. 5, 6, 7. & v. 15. ⁱ John v. 14, 15. Mark xi. 24. Heb. xiii. 15. Psal. lxii. 8. lxxxvi. 7. lv. 16. lvii. 1. 2. & xvii. 6. ^k Eph. iii. 12. ^l Rom. viii. 15. Gal. iv. 6. ^m Rom. x. 14. Psal. lxxvii. 1, 2. ⁿ Psal. xxxii. 5. & li. 14, 15. ^o 1 Tim. ii. 8. ^p Psal. xxxviii. 18. ^q Isa. xxvii. 5.

joy^a; hope^r; desire and love to God^s; and love to all his commands^t; and to his people out of love to him^u. You must seek the Spirit himself in the first place^w: and all spiritual things^x. Praying only for carnal things, shews a carnal heart, and leaves it carnal. Pray for faith^y; and for such things as may serve most for the glorifying God^z. And for outward things, you must act faith in submission to his will. And this prayer sets you in a holy frame^z. Hallowing God's name must be your aim^b; not your lusts^c.

(6.) Strive to bring your soul into order by this duty, however disordered by guilt, anguish, inordinate cares, or fears^d. A watch must be often wound up. You must wrestle in prayer against your unbelief, doubting, fears, cares, reluctancy of the flesh to that which is good; against all evil lusts and desires, coldness of affection, impatience, trouble of spirit; every thing that is contrary to a holy life, and the graces and holy desires to be acted for yourselves or others^e. Stir up yourselves to the duty^f. Though the flesh be cross and reluctant, we must not yield, but resist by the Spirit^g. And thus we shall find the Spirit helping our infirmities^h. Tho' God seem to defer long, we must not faint, or be

X 4

discou-

^a Psal. cv. 3. ^r Psal. lxxi. 5. ^s Psal. iv. 6. ^t Psal. cxix. 4, 5. ^u Psal. cxxii. 8. ^w Luke xi. 13. Psal. xxxvii. 5. ^x Matt. vi. 33. ^y Mark ix. 24. ^z 2 Chron. i. 11, 12. ^a Matt. xxvi. 42. Luke xxii. 42, 43. ^b Matt. vi. 9. ^c Jam. iv. 3. ^d Psal. xxxii. 1, 5. ^e lv. 16, 17, 20, 22. & lxix. 32. ^f Phil. iv. 6, 7. ^g 1 Sam. i. ^h Col. iv. 12. Rom. xv. 30. ⁱ Col. ii. 1, 2. Isa. lxiv. 7. ^j Matt. xxvi. 41. ^k Rom. viii. 26, 27.

discouraged ^l. The greater our agonies be, the more earnestly we are to pray ^k. This is προσευχή *τῇ προσευχῇ* to continue instant in prayer ^l. Thus you will find prayer a great heart-work, and not such a thing as may be done while you think on other things; and that it requireth all the strength of faith and affection that you can possibly stir up. Thus you may get a holy frame.

(7.) You must make a good use of the whole matter, and all the manner of prayer, as ordinary and extraordinary exigencies may require, to stir up grace in you, by wrestling, and to bring your heart into a holy frame. As, in *confession*, you must condemn yourself according to the flesh, but not as you are in Christ. You must not deny that grace that you have, as if you were only wicked hitherto, and now to begin again; which hinders praise for grace received in those that are already converted. In *supplication*, you must endeavour to work up your heart to a godly sorrow ^m; and a holy sense of your own sin and misery; and lay before you the aggravations thereof ⁿ. *Complaint* and *lamentation* are one great part of prayer, as the Lamentations of Jeremiah. And you must add *pleadings* to your petitions, with such arguments as may serve to strengthen faith, and to stir up and kindle affection ^o. Which pleadings are taken from attributes ^p; promises ^q; the equity of our cause ^r; the advantage and benefit of the

^l Luke xviii. 1, 7. ^k Psal. xxii. 1, 2. Luke xxii. 42.

^l Rom. xii. 12. Eph. vi. 18. ^m Psal. xxxviii. 18.

ⁿ Psal. li. 3. & cii. ^o Job. xxiii. 4. ^p Numb. xvi.

12, 13. ^q 2 Sam. vii. 27, 28. ^r Gen. xxxii. 9, 10.

^s Psal. xvii. 2, 3.

the thing, to the glory of God, and our comfort *. Naked petitions are not sufficient, when the soul findeth special cause of struggling and wrestling against corruptions and dangers, and for mercies. Christ's large prayer † is made up of pleading, and very few petitions. And we must make use also of praise and thanksgiving, to stir up peace, joy, love, &c. ‡ Especially be much in praising God for mercies of the new state in Christ w; and then you will the better give thanks for all benefits on his account x; and plead those benefits, to stir up to faith and duty. That brief ejaculation, *Lord, have mercy on me*, is very good to be used; but it will not answer the end and use of the whole duty of prayer; as some lazy carnal people would have it, and so harden themselves in the neglect of the duty: though the large improvement and use of all the matter of prayer at all times, is not required, but only as ordinary and extraordinary occasions may require.

{8.} You must not *confine* and *limit your prayers* by any prescribed form; seeing it is impossible that any such forms should be contrived, as should answer and fit all the various conditions and necessities of the soul at all times. I do not condemn all forms, as that made by Christ, the Lord's prayer; though it were easy to shew, that Christ never intended it for a form of prayer, so as to bind any to the precise form of words; and it is plain the Spirit of God hath expressed it in different words y. But better

69

* Psal. cxv. 1, 2. & lxxix. 9, 10, 13. † John xvii.

‡ Gen. xxxiii. 10. Psal. xviii. 1, 2, 3. xxxiii. 1. lxxiv. 14. & civ. 34. w Eph. i. 3. x Eph. v. 20. † Thes. v.

18. y Matt. vi. Luke xi.

to pray by that form, or other forms, than not at all. It is uncharitable, to take away crutches, or wooden legs, from lame people; yet none will look upon them but as dead helps. I say, it is utterly unlawful to bind ourselves to any form; because none can answer the duty fitly, and suitably to particular occasions². You must make the whole scripture your common prayer book, as the primitive church did; being the language of the Spirit, reaching all occasions and conditions, and fittest to speak to God in. And if you use a form, you must follow it by the Spirit, farther than the form goes, according as he shall guide you by the word; or else you quench the Spirit³. If you know the principles of prayer, and have a lively sense of your necessities, and hearty desires of God's grace and mercies, you will be able to pray without forms, and your affections will bring forth words out of the fulness of your heart. And you need not be over solicitous and timorous about words; for, doubtless, the Spirit, who is the help to us in speaking to men, will also much more help us to speak to God, if we desire it⁴. And God regards not eloquent words, nor artificial composition; neither need we regard it in private prayer⁵. If you limit yourselves to forms, you will thereby grow formal, and limit the Spirit.

7. Another means appointed of God, is *singing of psalms, i. e.* songs of any sacred subject composed to a tune, hymns or songs of praise, and spiritual songs,

² Eph. vi. 18. Phil. iv. 6. John xv. 7. 1 Thess. v. 18. Eph. v. 20. ³ 1 Thess. v. 19. ⁴ 1 Cor. i. 5. ⁵ Isa. xxxviii. 14.
Mark xiii. 11. Luke xii. 11, 12.

songs, of any sublime spiritual matter, as Psal. xlv. and the song of Solomon. God hath commanded it in the New Testament^e; though now in these days, many question whether it be an ordinance or no. And there were many commands for it under the Old Testament^f. Moses and the children of Israel sang before David's time^g. David composed psalms by the Spirit to be sung publicly^h; yea privately tooⁱ. Other songs also were made upon several occasions, and used, whether they were parts of the scripture or no; as Solomon made a thousand and five^k. And they made songs upon occasion. Which teacheth, that it is lawful for us to do so, if they be according to the word^l. The matter of scripture may be sung^m. Christ and his disciples sang a hymnⁿ, supposed to be one of David's psalms; and they were written for our instruction, as well as other parts of scripture^o; and so to be used now in singing. They speak of the things of the New Testament, either figuratively or clearly; and we may understand them better now, than the Jews could under the old Testament^p. Christians heretofore practised this duty as well as Jews^q. Hence their *antelucani hymni* (the hymns they sung before daylight) were noted by *Pliny* a heathen. These songs or hymns may be used at all times, especially for
 holy

^e Col. iii. 16. Eph. v. 19. ^f Psal. cxlix. 1,
 2, 3. xcvi. 1. & c. ^g Exod. xv. ^h 2 Sam. xxiii.
 1, 2. ⁱ Psal. xl. 3. 2 Chron. xxix. 30. Psal.
 cv. 2. ^k 1 Kings iv. 32. ^l Isa. xxxviii. 9, 14,
^m Psal. cxix. 54. ⁿ Matt. xxvi. 30. ^o Rom xv.
 4, & c. ^p 2 Cor. iii. 16. Gal. ii. 17. ^q Acts xvi. 25.

holy mirth or rejoicing^r. But this text is not to be taken exclusively in singing, any more than in prayer^s.

But the right manner of this duty is chiefly to be noted. And, here, (1.) Trust not upon the melody of the voice; as if that pleased God, who delighteth only in the melody of the heart^t. Neither let the recreating your senses be your end, which is but a carnal work; *Non musica chordula, sed cor; non clamans, sed amans, psallit in aure Dei*: Not a musical string; but the heart; not crying, but loving, sounds in the ear of the Lord. This spiritual musick was typified by musical instruments of old. (2.) You must use it for the same end as meditation and prayer, according to the nature of what is sung; that is to quicken faith^u; and joy and delight in the Lord, glorying in him^w. You are never right until you can be heartily merry in the Lord, to act joy and mirth holily^x; and also to get more knowledge and instruction in heavenly mysteries, and in your duty, teaching and admonishing^y. Many psalms are maschils, (as their title is) that is, psalms of instruction. Thus we are to sing such psalms as speak in the first person, though we cannot apply them to ourselves concerning ourselves; and in this we do not lie. David speaks of Christ as of himself, as a pattern of affliction and virtue, to instruct others; and we sing such psalms, not as our words but words for our instruction. And therein we do not

^r Jam. v. 13. ^s Psal. xxxviii. 18. ^t 2 Chron. xxxv. 20.

^u Col. iii. 16. ^w 2 Chron. xx. 21, 22. ^x Acts xvi. 25, 26.

^y Psal. civ. 33, 34. cv. 3. cxlix. 1, 2. & xxxiii. 1, 2, 3.

^z Jam. v. 13. Eph. v. 19. ^z Col. iii. 16.

lie, any more than the Levites, the sons of Korah, or Jeduthun, or other musicians bound to sing them ^z. Though it be good to personate all the good that we can; yet we have so much liberty in the use of psalms, that though we cannot apply all to ourselves, as speaking and thinking the same, yet we shall answer the end, if we sing for our instruction ^a. And Psalms have a peculiar fitness for teaching and instructing; because the pleasantness of metre said or sung, is very helpful to the memory ^b. And there is a variety of curious artifice in the placing of words in the psalms upon this account; and there are some alphabetical psalms ^c. And, by the melody of the sound, the instruction comes in with delight, as a physical dose sugared; and sorrow is naturally allayed, to fit the mind for spiritual joy; and dis-tempered passions appeased ^d. So Orpheus, Amphion, and others, were famous for civilizing rude and barbarous people by musick.

8. *Fasting*, is also an ordinance of God to be used for the same purpose and end, and is commended to us under the New Testament ^e. And we have examples of it ^f. Under the Old Testament, there were frequent commands for it, and examples, chiefly upon occasion of extraordinary afflictions ^g; besides the anniversary great day of atonement ^h, when

^z Psal. v. xxxix. & xlii. ^a Psal. vi. xxvi. xli. ci. & cxxxii. ^b See Deut. xxxi. 19, 21. ^c Psal. xxv. xxxiv. xxxvii. cxi. cxii. cxix. & cxlv. ^d 2 Kings iii. 15. 1 Sam. xvi. 14, 15, 16. ^e Matt. ix. 15, & xvii. 21. 1 Cor. vii. 5. ^f Acts xiii. 2, 3, & xiv. 23. ^g 1 Sam. vii. 6. Neh. ix. 1. Dan. ix. 3. & x. 2, 3. 2 Sam. xii. 16. Psal. xxxv. 13. 2 Sam. iii. 31. Joel ii. 13. ^h Lev. xvi. 29, 31.

when every one was to fast on pain of cutting off. There is a prophecy of the same for the times of the New Testamentⁱ. It was used most on extraordinary occasions; and it is a help to holiness by faith, because it is a meet help for extraordinary prayer and humiliation^k. But the great matter is, to use it rightly, as followeth.

(1.) Trust not on it, as meriting or satisfying, as Papists and Pharisees do^l, putting it in the place of Christ; or as a means of itself conferring grace, and mortifying lusts, as many do, who may sooner kill their bodies than their lusts; or as any purifying rite; yea, or in or for itself acceptable to God^m. Imagine not, that prayer is not acceptable without it; for this is against faith. Fasts, as well as feasts, are no substantial parts of worship, because not spiritual, but bodily; tho' under the Old Testament, they were parts, as instituted rites, figurative and teaching. But that use is now ceased: as that on the day of atonement, and so many significative rites adjoined to fasting, as sack-cloth, ashes, rending garments, pouring out water, lying on the earth. The kingdom of God consists not in these thingsⁿ. The soul is hardened by trusting in them^o.

(2.) Use it as a help to extraordinary prayer and humiliation; that the mind may not be unsuited for it, by eating, drinking, or bodily pleasures^p. It is good only as a help to the soul, removing im-

ⁱ Zech. xii. 12. ^k Joel i. 14. & ii. 12. ^l Luke xviii. 11. ^m 1 Tim. iv. 8. Heb. xii. 9. Col. ii. 16, 17, 20, 23. ⁿ Rom. xiv. 17. ^o Isa. lviii. 3. 6. Zech. vii. 5, 6, 10. ^p Joel. ii. 13. Isa. xxii. 12, 13. Zech. xii. 10-14.

pediments. The best fast is, when the mind is taken off from delights, as in John the Baptist's case ^q, when heaven and godly sorrow take off the soul ^r.

(3.) Use it in such a measure as may be proper for its end; without which it is worth nothing. If abstinence divert your mind, by reason of a gnawing appetite, then you had better eat sparingly, as Daniel, in his great fast ^s. Some have not enough of spiritual mindedness, to give up themselves to fasting and prayer, without great distraction; and such had better eat, than go beyond their strength in a thing not absolutely necessary, which produceth only a slavish act, as in the case of virginity ^t. Christ would not have his weak disciples necessitated to the duty ^u. In the mean time, such should strive to be sensible of the weakness and carnality that hinders their use of this excellent help.

9. You may expect here something to be spoken of *vows*. But I shall only say this of them. Think not to bring yourselves to good by vows and promises, as if the strength of your own law could do it, when the strength of God's law doth not. We bring children to make promises of amendment; but we know how well they keep them. The devil will urge you to vow, and then to break, that he may perplex your conscience the more.

10. Another great mean is, *fellowship and communion with the saints* ^w.

FIRST,

^q Matt. iii. 4. ^r Zech. xii 10—14.

^s 2, 3. ^t 1 Cor. vii. 7, 8, 9, 34, 35, 36.

^u 14, 15. ^w Acts ii. 42.

^s Chap. x.

^t Matt. ix.

FIRST, This mean must be used *diligently*. Who soever God saveth, should be added to some visible church, and come into communion of other saints; and, if they have not opportunity for it, their heart should be bent towards it. Sometimes the church is in the wilderness, and hindered from visible communion and ordinances: but they that believe in Christ, are always willing and desirous so to add and join themselves ^x. *And they continued steadfastly in fellowship* ^y. And God binds his people to leave the fellowship and society of the wicked as much as may be ^z. And, so far as we are necessitated to accompany with them, we ought to shew charity to their souls and bodies ^a. This communion with saints is to be exercised in private converse ^b, and in public assemblies ^c. And doubtless it ought to be used for the attainment of holiness: as may be proved.

1st, In general, Because God communicates all salvation to people ordinarily by, or in a church; either by taking them into fellowship, or holding forth the light of truth by his churches to the world. A church is the temple of God, where God dwells ^d. He hath placed his name and salvation there, as in Jerusalem of old ^e. He hath given to his churches those officers and ordinances whereby he converts others ^f. His springs are there: He makes the several members of a church, instruments

^x Acts ii. 41, 44, 47. ^y 1 John ii. 19. ^z 2 Cor. vi. 17. ^a 1 Cor. v. 9. ^b Psal. ci. 4, 5, 6, 7.
^c Heb. x. 25. Zech. xiv. 16, 17. ^d 1 Tim. iii. 15.
^e Joel ii. 32, 2. ^f 1 Cor. xii. 20.
^g Psal. lxxxvii. 7.

struments for the conveyance of his grace and fulness from one to another, as the members of the natural body convey to each other the fulness of the head ^h. All the new-born are brought forth and nourished by the church ⁱ, and therefore all that would be saved, should join to a church: they shall prosper that love the church, so as to stand in its gates, and unite as members, brethren, and companions ^k. And wrath is denounced against those that are not members of it, at least, of the mystical body: they cannot have God for their Father, that have not that for their mother ^l. This maketh those that desire fellowship with God, to take hold of the skirts of his people ^m.

2dly, In *particular*, Fellowship with the saints conduceth to holiness many ways.

1. By manifold helps to holiness, which are received thereby: As,

(1.) The *word* and *sacraments* ⁿ; and all the ministerial office and labour in watching over souls ^o. None of these helps can be enjoyed without fellowship of saints, each with other. And, if believers had been to have stood single by themselves and not maintained fellowship with each other, for mutual assistance and common good, none of these things could have continued; neither could any believer have been extant at this day, in an ordinary way, but even the very name of believers had been abolished.

Y

(2.) *Mu-*

^h Eph. iv. 16. ⁱ Isa. lxvi. 8, 11. xlix. 20. & lx. 4.
^k Psal. cxxii. 2, 4, 6. ^l Song i. 7, 8. ^m Zech. viii.
 23. ⁿ Acts ii. 42. Isa. ii. 3. Matt. xxviii. 19, 20.
^o Heb. xiii. 17. 1 Thess. v. 12, 13. Isa. xxv. 6.

(2.) *Mutual prayer*, which is the more forcible when all pray together ^p.

(3.) *Mutual admonition, instruction, consolation*, to help each other when they are ready to fall, and to promote the good work in each other ^q. "He that walketh with wise men, shall be wise ^r." "Wo to him that is alone when he falleth ^s."

In church-fellowship there are many helpers, many to watch. Soldiers have their security in company; and the church is compared to an army with banners ^t. So, for quickening affections, iron sharpeneth iron ^u. Likewise the counsel of a friend, like ointment and perfume, rejoiceth the heart ^w. Yea the wounds and reproofs of the righteous are as precious balm ^x.

(4.) *External supports*; which mitigate afflictions, and are to be communicated mutually ^y. The affliction is increased, when none careth for our souls ^z.

(5.) *Excommunication*, when offences are exceeding heinous, or men obstinate in sin. This ordinance is appointed for the destruction of the flesh, that the Spirit may be saved ^a. Better and more hopeful it is, to be cast out by the church for a person's amendment, than to be wholly without the church at all times; and better to be a lost sheep, than a goat or swine. For excommunication cuts off actual communion only, until repentance be evident; and not absolutely abolisheth the title and relation of a brother and church member, though it judgeth one to be an unnatural brother, and

^p Matt. xviii. 19, 20. ^z Cor. i. 10, 11. Jam. v. 16: Rom. xv. 30. ^q 1 Theff. v. 14. ^r Prov. xiii. 20.

^s See Eccl. iv. 9—12. ^t Song vi. 4, 10. ^u Prov. xxvii. 17. ^w Prov. xxvii. 9. ^x Psal. cxli. 5. ^y Eph. iv. 28. ^a 1 Pet. iv. 9, 10. ^z Psal. cxlii. 4. ^a 1 Cor. v. 5.

and a pernicious rotten member at present, not fit for acts of communion. Besides, admonition is still to be afforded ^b; and any means are to be used, that may serve to cure and restore him. The church reacheth forth a hand to help such a person, though it do not join hands in fellowship with him; or it communicateth to him, not with him. Yet, if he have not so much grace as to repent, it were better he had never known the way of righteousness ^c.

(6.) The lively examples of saints are before our eyes in church fellowship, to teach and encourage ^d.

2. By those holy duties that are required and do appertain to this fellowship and communion. All acts that belong to this fellowship, are holy; as, hearing, receiving the sacraments, prayer, mutual admonitions, &c. I shall consider some such holy acts, whereby we are rather doers than receivers; and which we perform towards others: As

(1.) *Godly Discourse*, teaching, admonishing, comforting others in Christ; which we cannot so perform towards others, as towards those we have strict fellowship with in Christ. Others, like swine, trample these jewels under foot; and saints therefore are forced to refrain from godly discourse in their company ^e. But holy discourse is most acceptable to the saints, and to be practised with them ^f; and is greatly to the advantage of holiness ^g.

(2.) In *helping, succouring, and conversing* with Christ in his members. We do good to Christ in his members in church fellowship; and we our-

Y 2

selves,

^b 2 Thess. iii. 15. ^c 2 Pet. ii. 21. ^d Phil. iii. 17.
 & iv. 9. 2 Tim. iii. 10, 11. 2 Cor. ix. 2. ^e Amos
 v. 10, 13. & vi. 10. ^f Mal. iii. 16. ^g Prov. xi. 25.

selves, as members of Christ, act as well from Christ as towards Christ; whereas, if we do good to others without, we do good only for Christ's sake, but not to Christ^h. We have advantage in general, to do all duties that belong to us as members of Christ to fellow-members: which we cannot do, if separate from them; as a natural member cannot perform its office to other members, if separate from them.

SECONDLY, The means must be used *rightly*, for the attaining of holiness *only in Christ*.

1. One rule is, *Do not trust in church-membership*, or on churches, as if this or that relation in fellowship commended you to God of itself; whereas, a church-way is but a help to fellowship with Christ, and walking in the duties of that fellowship. The Israelites stumbled at Christ, by trusting on their carnal privileges, and set them in opposition to Christ; whereas they should have only made them subservient to Christ. Confidence in them should have been abandoned, as Paul's example teachethⁱ. We must not glory in Paul, Apollos, Cephas, but in Christ; else we glory in the flesh, and in men^k. Trusting on church privileges is an inlet to formality and licentiousness^l; and thence the corruption of churches^m.

2. Follow no church any farther than you may follow it in the way of Christ; and keep fellowship with it only upon the account of Christ, because it follows

^h Matt. xxv. 35—49. Psal. xvi. 2, 3. ⁱ Phil. iii. 3, 4, 5, &c. ^k 1 Cor. i. 12, 13. & iii. 21. ^l Jer. vii. 4, 8, 9, 10. ^m Isa. i. 10. 2 Tim. ii. 20.

follows Christ, and hath fellowship with Christ ⁿ. If a church revolt from Christ, we must not follow it, how ancient soever it may be ; as the Israelitish church was not to be followed, when it persecuted Christ and his apostles ; and many, by adhering to that church, fell from Christ ^o. We are indeed to hear the church, but not every one that calls itself so, and none any farther than it speaketh as a true church, according to the voice of the shepherd ^p. We must subject ourselves to ministers of Christ, and stewards of his mysteries ^q ; but must give up ourselves first to Christ absolutely, and to the church according to the will of Christ ^r. Our fear must not be taught by the precepts of men ^s. The doctrines of any men are to be tried by scripture, whatever authority they pretend to ^t. An unlimited following church-guides brought the church into Babylon, and into all manner of spiritual whoredoms and abominations. You are not baptized into the name of the church, but into the name of Christ ^u.

3. Do not think, that you must attain this or that degree of grace, before you join yourself in full communion with a church of Christ in all ordinances. But when you have given up yourself to Christ, and learned the duty of communion ; give up yourself unto a church of Christ, though you find much weakness and inability. For church-ordinances of special communion serve to strengthen you ; and

Y 3

how

ⁿ 1 John i. 3. Zech. viii. 23. ^o Phil. ii. 6. Acts
vi. 13, 14. & xxi. 28. ^p Joh. x. 27. ^q 1 Cor. iv. 1.

^r 2 Cor. viii. 5.

^s Matt. xv.

^t Acts xvii. 11

^u 1 Cor. i. 13.

how can you get heat being alone? The disciples, as soon as converted, embraced all fellowship ^w. And churches, that they may forward holiness in themselves and others, must be willing to receive Christ's weak ones, and to feed his lambs as well as better grown sheep, and bear them on their sides ^x. How else shall Christ's weak ones grow strong by that nourishment that other parts supply? They are very unreasonable that expect Christians should grow out of church-fellowship, to as high a degree of grace, as those that are in those pastures of tender grass; and are unwilling to receive any that they are like to have occasion to bear with: whereas bearing and long-suffering are great duties of church-fellowship ^y. The weakest have most need to be strengthened by church-communion; and we are bound to receive them, as Christ hath received us ^z. We do not reject or separate the weaker parts of the body ^a, but put more honour and comeliness on them. Admission into the churches in the apostolic times was gained upon profession, with a shew of seriousness; though tares got in among the wheat, and many scandals arose to the reproach of the ways of Christ; and the greatest strictness will not keep out all hypocrites; yet the best care must be taken, so far as not to hinder any that have the least truth of grace.

4. Keep communion with a church, for the sake of communion with Christ ^b. Therefore you must keep

^w Acts ii. 42.^x Isa. lxvi. 12.^y Eph. iv. 2, 3.

Rom. xiv. 1.

^z Rom. xv. 7.^a 1 Cor. xii. 23, 24.^b 1 John i. 3. Zech. viii. 23.

keep communion in Christ's pure ways only, and, in them, seek Christ by faith; that, in the enjoyment of those advantages, you may receive and act the godliness and holiness^e forementioned, and aim at spiritual flourishing and growth in grace. Chuse therefore fellowship with the most spiritual churches. Judge of churches and men, according to the rule of the new creature^c; and try them^d; otherwise a church may corrupt you. See that thy communion answer its end, to tend to thy edification, not to destruction; which you ought to take all the advantages of, not only in the church where you are a member, but by communion with other churches, as occasionally providence casts you among them: for your communion with a particular church obligeth to communion with all churches of Christ in his ways, as you are called thereto^e. And it is an abuse to say, we are members of a church in London, and therefore refuse fellowship with a church in the country; seeing, if we are members of Christ, we are members of one another, whether single persons or churches. And endeavour to join in fellowship with the godly of the place where you live, that you may have the more frequent and constant communion. Onesimus, though converted at Rome, must be one of the church of the Colossians, because he lived there^f. The union of the saints together in distinct societies, according to the places where they lived was the apostolic practice, and cannot be violated without

Y 4

fin,

^c 2 Cor. v. 16, 17. ^d Rev. ii. 2. & iii. 9. ^e 1 Cor. x. 17. ^f Col. iv. 9. compared with Philemon, ver. 10.

fin. Such can best watch over one another, admonish, comfort, and edify each other; which is the benefit of communion. And they indeed destroy communion, that seek a communion where they cannot have this benefit. I only add to this head, that church fellowship, without practising the ways of Christ, is but a conspiracy to take his name in vain, and a counterfeit church fellowship of hypocrites. It is impudence for such to invite others to their communion; tyranny, to compel them. Every christian is bound to seek a better church-fellowship by reformation; and those that do so, are the best sons of Christ's church, who inquire, Is this the way to enjoy Christ? a church-way being appointed to enjoy Christ therein.

5. Especially leave not the church in persecution, when you need its help most, and are then most tried whether you will cleave to it. This is a sign of apostasy ^e. We should cleave to one another as one flesh, even to prisons and death; or else we deny Christ in his members ^h.

^e Heb. x. 25, 26. Matt. xxiv. 9, 10, 12, 13, 14.

^h Matt. xxv. 43.

DIRECT

DIRECTION. XIV.

That you may seek holiness and righteousness, only by believing in Christ, and walking in him by faith, according to the former directions, take encouragement from the great advantages of this way, and the excellent properties of it.

EXPLICATION.

THIS direction may serve as an epilogue or conclusion, by stirring us up unto a lively and chearful embracing those gospel-rules fore-mentioned, by several weighty motives. Many are kept from seeking godliness, because they know not the way to it; or the way that they think of, seems uncouth, unpleasant, disadvantageous, and full of discouragement; like the way through the wilderness to Canaan, which wearied the Israelites, and occasioned their many murmurings¹.

But this is a way so good and excellent, that those that have the true knowledge of it, and desire heartily to be godly, cannot dislike it. I shall shew the excellency of it in several particulars. But you should first call to mind what is the way I have taught, viz. union and fellowship with Christ, and by faith in Christ, as discovered in the gospel; not by the law, or in a natural condition, or by thinking to get it before we come to Christ, to procure Christ by it, which is striving against the stream:
but

¹ Numb. xxi. 4.

but that we must first apply Christ and his salvation to ourselves, for our comfort, and that by confident faith ; and then walk by that faith, according to the new man, in Christ, and not as in a natural condition : and use all means of holiness rightly for this end. Now, that this is an excellent, advantageous way, appears by the following desirable properties of it.

1st, It hath this property, that it tends to the abasement of all flesh, and exaltation of God only in his grace and power through Christ. And so it is agreeable to God's design in all his works, and the end that he aimeth at ^k; and a fit means for the attaining the end that we ought to aim at in the first place, which is the hallowing, sanctifying, and glorifying God's name in all things ; and is the first and chief petition ^l; and is the end of all our actings ^m; was the end of giving the law ⁿ. God made all things for Christ, and would have him have the pre-eminence in all ^o; that the Father may be glorified in the Son ^p. And this property of it is a great argument to prove, that it is the way of God, and hath the character of his image stamped upon it. We may say, that it is like him, and a way according to his heart ; as Christ proveth his doctrine to be of God, by this argument ^q. And Paul proveth the doctrine of justification, and of sanctification, and salvation by grace through faith:

^k Rom. xi. 6. Isa. ii. 17. Ezek. xxxvi. 21, 22, 23, 31, 32. Psal. cxlv. 4. ^l Matt. vi. 9, ^m 1 Cor. x. 31. ⁿ Rom. iii. 19, 20. ^o Col. i. 17, 18. ^p John xiv. 13. ^q John vii. 18.

faith, to be of God; because it excludes all boastings of the creature^r. This property appears evidently in the mystery of sanctification by Christ in us through faith. For,

1. It sheweth, that we can do nothing by our natural will, or any power of the flesh; and that God will not enable us to do any thing that way^s, however nature be stirred up by the law, or natural helps^t. And so it serveth to work self-lothing and abasement, and to make us look upon nature as desperately wicked, and past cure, and not to be reformed, but put off, by putting on Christ. It remains wicked, and only wicked, after we have put on Christ.

2. It sheweth, that all our good works, and living to God, are not by our own power and strength at all, but by the power of Christ, living in us by faith; and that God enableth us to act, not merely according to our natural power, as he enableth carnal men and all other creatures, but above our own power, by Christ united to us and in us through the Spirit. All men, live, move, and have their being in him; and, by his universal support and maintenance of nature, in its being and activity, they act^u; so that the glory of their acting as creatures belongs to God. But God acts more immediately in his people; who are one flesh and one spirit with Christ: and act not by their own power, but by the power of the Spirit of Christ in them, as closely united to him, and being the living

^r Rom. iii. 27, 28. ^t 1 Cor. i. 29, 30, 31. Eph. iii. 8, 9. ^s Rom. vii. 18. ^t Gal. iii. 21. ^u Heb. i. 3.

living temples of his Spirit; so that Christ is the immediate principal agent of all their good works, and they are Christ's works properly, who works all our works in us and for us: and yet they are the saints works by fellowship with Christ, by whose light and power the faculties of the saints do act and are acted ^z, so that we are to ascribe all our works to God in Christ, and thank him for them as free gifts ^v. God enableth us to act, not by ourselves, as he doth others, but by himself. The wicked are supported in acting only according to their own nature; so they act wickedly. Thus all are said to live, move, and have their being in God ^z. But God enableth us to conquer sin, not by ourselves, but by himself ^a; and the glory of enabling us doth not only belong to him, which the Pharisee could not but ascribe to him ^b, but also the glory of doing all in us. And yet we work as one with Christ, even as he works as one with the Father, by the Father working in him. We live as branches by the juice of the vine, act as members by the animal spirits of the head, and bring forth fruit by marriage to him as our husband, and work in the strength of him as the living bread that we feed on. He is all in the new man ^c; and all the promises are made good in him ^d.

2dly, It hath this property, that it consisteth well with other doctrines of the gospel; which contrary errors do not. And hence this is the way

to

^x Gal. ii. 20. Eph. iii. 16, 17. Col. i. 1. ^y 1 Cor. xv. 10. Phil. i. 11. ^z Acts xvii. 27. ^a Hos. i. 7. ^b Luke xviii. 11. ^c Col. iii. 11. ^d 2 Cor. i. 20.

to confirm us in many other points of the gospel; and therefore appears to be true, by its harmony with other truths, and fit linking with them in the same golden chain of the mystery of godliness; and evidence them to be true, by their harmony with it. I have shewed, that mens mistaking the true way of sanctification, is the cause of perverting the scriptures in other points of faith, and of declining from the truth, to Popish, Socinian, and Arminian tenets; because men cannot seriously take that for truth, which they judge not to be according to godliness. But this way of holiness will evidence, that these gospel-doctrines which they refuse, are according to godliness; and those tenets which a blind zeal for holiness moveth them to embrace, are indeed contrary to holiness; however Satan appeareth to their natural understandings as an angel of light in such tenets. Whatever men say, it is certain that Legalists, are indeed the Antinomians, I shall instance in some truths confirmed by it.

1. The doctrine of *original sin*, viz. not only the guilt of Adam's sin, and a corrupt nature, but utter impotency to do spiritual good, and proneness to sin, which is death to God, in all people according to nature^e. There is an utter inability to keep the law truly in any point. Many deny this doctrine; because they think, that, if people believe this, they will excuse their sins by it, and be apt to despair of all striving to do good works, and leave off all endeavours, and grow licentious; and they think it will
be

be more conducing to godliness to hold and teach either that there is no original sin or corruption derived from Adam, or at least it is done away, either, in the world, by universal redemption, or, in the church, by baptism; and that there is free-will restored, whereby people are able to incline themselves to do good; that men may be more encouraged to set upon good works, and their neglect made inexcusable. All this is indeed forcible against seeking and endeavouring for holiness by the free-will and power of nature; which is the way of endeavouring which I directed you to avoid; and, if there were no new way to holiness since the fall, original sin might make us despair: but there is a new birth, a new heart, a new creature; and therefore we have directed you to the seeking of holiness by the Spirit of Christ, and willing good freely by a spiritual power, as new creatures, partakers of a divine nature in Christ. Yea it is necessary to know the first Adam, that we may know the second^f, to believe the fall, and original sin that we may be stirred up to fly to Christ by faith for holiness by free gift, knowing that we cannot attain it by our own power and free-will^g. There were no need of a new man or a new creation, if the old were not without strength and life^h. But original deadness cannot hinder God's working faith, and hungerings and thirstings after Christ, by the Spirit through the gospel, in those that God chuseth to walk holily and blamelessly before him in loveⁱ. And so we are made alive in a new head,

and

^f Rom. v. 12. ^g 2 Cor. i. 9. Matt. ix. 12, 13. Rom. vii. 24, 25. 2 Cor. iii. 3. Eph. v. 14. ^h John iii. 5, 6. Eph. ii. 8. ⁱ 1 Thes. i. 4, 5. Acts xxvi. 18.

and become branches of another vine, living to God by the Spirit, not by nature.

2. It confirms us in the doctrine of *predestination*; which many deny, because they say, it takes men off from endeavours as fruitless, by telling men, that all events are predetermined. This argument would be more forcible against endeavours by the power of our own free-will, but not at all against endeavours for holiness by the operation of God, giving us faith and all holiness by his own Spirit working in us through Christ. We are to trust on Christ for the grace of the elect, and God's good-will towards men ^k. Election by grace destroys seeking by works, but not by grace ^l. And we are here taught, to seek for salvation only in the way of the elect; and we may conclude, that holiness is to be had by God's will, and not by our own; and it may move us to desire holiness by the will of God ^m. And, seeing it appears, by this doctrine of sanctification through Christ, that we are God's workmanship as to all the good wrought in us ⁿ, we may well admit, that he hath appointed his pleasure from eternity, without infringing the natural liberty of our corrupt wills, which reacheth not unto good works ^o. Man's natural free-will may well consist with God's decree; as in paradise. *Decretum radix contingentiae.*

3. It confirms us in the true doctrine of *justification and reconciliation with God by faith*, relying on the merits of Christ's blood, without any works of our own and

^k Matt. iii. 17. Luke ii. 14. Psal. cvi. 4, 5. ^l Rom. xi. 5, 6. ^m Rom. ix. 16. Psal. cx. 3. ⁿ Phil. ii. 12, 13. Eph. ii. 10. • Acts xv. 18. compared with 36.

and without considering faith as a work to procure favour by the righteousness of the act, but only as a hand to receive the gift, or as the very eating and drinking of Christ actually, rather than any kind of condition intitling us to him as our food. This great doctrine of the gospel many hate, as breaking the strongest bonds of holiness, and opening a way to all licentiousness; for they reckon, that the conditionality of works to attain God's favour, and avoid his wrath, and the necessity of them to salvation, are the most necessary and effectual impulsives to all holiness; and they account, that the other doctrine opens the flood-gates to licentiousness. And truly this consideration would be of some weight, if people were to be brought to holiness by moral suasion, and their natural endeavours stirred up by the terms of the law, and by slavish fears and mercenary hopes; for the force of these motives would be altogether enervated by the doctrine of justification by free grace. But I have already shewed, that a man, being a guilty dead creature, cannot be brought to serve God out of love by force of any of these motives; and that we are not sanctified by any of our own endeavours to work holiness in ourselves, but rather by faith in Christ's death and resurrection, even the same whereby we are justified, and that the urging of the law stirs up sin; and that freedom from it is necessary to all holiness, as the Apostle teacheth *p*. And this way of sanctification confirms the doctrine of justification by faith, as the Apostle informeth *q*. For, if we are sanctified, and so restored to the image of God, and life,

p Rom. vi. 11, 14. and vii. 4, 5.

q Rom. viii. 1.

life, by the Spirit through faith ; it is evident, that God hath taken us into his favour, and pardoned our sins, by the same faith, without the law ; or else we should not have the fruits and effects of his favour thereby to our eternal salvation *. Yea his justice would not admit his giving life without works, if we were not made righteous in Christ by the same faith. And we cannot trust, to have holiness freely given us by Christ, upon any rational ground ; except we can also trust on the same Christ for free reconciliation, and forgiveness of sins for our justification. Neither can guilty cursed creatures, that cannot work by reason of their deadness under the curse, be brought to a rational love of God, except they apprehend his loving them first freely without works *. The great objection and reason of so many controversies and books written about it, is, because they think, that men will trust to be saved, however they live. But sanctification is an effect of justification, and floweth from the same grace ; and we trust for them both by the same faith, and for the latter in order to the former. And such a faith, be it never so confident, tendeth not to licentiousness, but to holiness : and we grant, that justification by grace destroys holiness by legal endeavours, but not by grace. So that there is no need to live a Papist, and die an Antinomian.

4. It confirms us in the doctrine of *real union with Christ*, so plentifully held forth in scripture ; which doctrine some account a vain notion. and cannot endure it, because they think it worketh not holiness, but presumption : whereas I have shewed, that it is

Z

absolutely

* Rom. viii. 2

* 1 John iv. 19.

absolutely necessary for the enjoyment of spiritual life and holiness, which is treasured up in Christ ; and that so inseparably, that we cannot have it without a real union with him ^t. The members and branches cannot live without union with the vine and head ; nor the stones be part of the living temple, except they be really joined mediately or immediately to the corner stone.

5. It confirms us in the doctrine of *certain final perseverance* of the saints ^u. They think this doctrine maketh people careless of good works. I answer, it maketh people careless of seeking them by their own natural strength, and in a way of slavish fear ; but careful and courageous in trusting on the grace of God for them, when they are brought, by regeneration, heartily to desire them ^x ; setting upon the doing of them in that grace ^y. And I have shewed, that all fears of damnation will never bring persons to work out of love ; and that nothing will do it but a comfortable doctrine.

3dly, It hath this excellent property, that it is the never-failing, effectually powerful, alone sufficient, and sure way to attain to true holiness. They that have the truth in them, find it ; and the truly humbled find it. People strive in vain, when they seek it any other way ; therefore venture with the lepers, else you die ^z. All other ways either stir up sin, or increase despair in you ; as seeking holiness by the law,

^t 2 Cor. xiii. 5. 1 John v. 12. John vi. 53. and xv. 5.
^u 1 Cor. i. 30. Col. iii. 11. John iii. 36. vi. 37, and
 v. 24. 1 John iii. 9. 1 Theff. v. 24. Phil. i. 6. John
 x. 23, 29. and iv. 14. ^x Rom. vi. 14. Numb. xiii. 30.
^y 1 Theff. v. 8, 11. ^z 2 Kings vii. 18. lv. 2. 3. 7.

law, and working under the curse doth ; and breeds but slavish, and hypocritical obedience at best, and restrains sin only, instead of mortifying it ^a. The jews sought another way, and could not attain it ^b. And all that seek it another way, shall lie down in sorrow ^c. And that (1.) because as we are under the law in our natural estate, we are dead, and children of wrath ^d. And the law curseth us, instead of helping us ^e ; and giveth no life by its obligation ^f. And we cannot work holiness in ourselves ^g. So that an humbled person finds it in vain, to seek holiness by the law, or his own strength ; for the law is weak through our flesh. Seeking a pure life without a pure nature, is building without a foundation. And there is no seeking a new nature from the law ; for it bids us make brick without straw ; and saith to the cripple, Walk, without giving any strength. (2.) In this way only God is reconciled to us, even in Christ ^h. And so he loves us, and is a fit object of our love ⁱ. And so, in this way only, we have a new and divine nature by the Spirit of Christ in us, effectually carrying us forth to holiness with life and love ^k ; and have new hearts according to the law ; so that we serve God heartily according to the new nature, and cannot but serve him ^l. So that here is a sure foundation for godliness, and love to God with all our heart, might, and soul ; and sin is not only restrained, but mortified ; and not only the outside made clean,

Z 2

but

^a Gal. iv. 25. ^b Rom. ix. ^c If. l. 11. ^d Eph. ii. 1, 3. ^e Gal. iii. 10. ^f Gal. iii. 21. ^g Rom. v. 6. ^h 2 Cor. v. 19. Eph. i. 7. ⁱ 1 John iv. 19. ^k Rom. viii. 5. Gal. v. 17. 2 Pet. i. 3, 4. ^l 1 John iii. 9.

but the inside, and the image of God renewed ; and holy actings surely follow. We sin not according to the new nature, tho' we are not perfect in degree, because of the old nature.

4^{thly}, It is a most pleasant way to those that are in it ^m ; and that in several respects.

1. It is a most *plain* way, easy to be found, to one that seeth his own deadness under the law, and is so renewed in the spirit of his mind, as to know and be persuaded of the truth of the gospel. Though such may be troubled and pestered with many legal thoughts and workings ; yet, when they seriously consider things, the way is so plain, that they think it folly and madness to go any other way : so that the way-faring men, though fools, shall not err therein ⁿ. The enlightened soul cannot think of another way, when truly humbled ^o. And, when we are in Christ, we have his Spirit to be our guide in this way ^p. So that we need not be filled with such distracting thoughts about knowledge of our way, as legal spirits are about thousands of cases of conscience, which do so multiply upon them, that they despair of finding out the way of religion, by reason of so various doubts, and manifold intricacies. Here, we may be sure, that God will so far teach us our duties, as that we shall not be misled with error, so as to continue in it to destruction ^q. What a trouble is it to a traveller to be doubtful of his way, and without a guide, when his business is of great importance, upon life and death ? It is even an heart breaking.

^m Prov. iii. 17.

ⁿ Is. xxxv, 8. Prov. viii. 9.

^o Prov. i. 8. ^p 1 John ii. 27. John xvi. 13. ^q Psal. xxv. 8, 9, 14.

breaking. But those that are in this way, may be sure, that though they sometimes err, yet they shall not err destructively, but shall discern their way again ^r.

2. It is *easy* to those that walk in it by the Spirit, tho' it be difficult to get into it, by reason of the opposition of the flesh or devil scaring us, or seducing us from it. Here you have holiness as a free gift received by faith, an act of the mind and soul. Whosoever will, may come, take it, and drink freely: and nothing is required but a willing mind ^s. But the law is an intolerable burden ^t, if duty be laid on us by its terms. We are not left in this way to conquer lusts by our endeavours, which is a successful work; but what is duty is given, and the law is turned into promises ^u. We have all now in Christ ^v. This is a catholic medicine, instead of a thousand. How pleasant would this free gift, holiness, be to us, if we knew our own wants, inabilities, and sinfulness? How ready are some to toil continually, and macerate their bodies in a melancholy legal way to get holiness rather than perish for ever? And therefore, how ready should we be, when it is only, take and have; believe, and be sanctified and saved ^x? Christ's burden is light by his Spirit's bearing it ^y. No weariness, but renewing of strength ^z.

3. It is a *way of peace* ^a, free from fears and terrors of conscience, that those meet with unavoidably

Z 3

who

^r Gal. iv. 7, 10. ^s John vii. 38. Isa. lv. i. Rev. xii. 17. ^t Matt. xxiii. 5. Acts xv. 10. ^u Heb. viii. Ezek. xxxvi. 25, 26. Jer. xxxi. 33. and xxxii. 40. ^v Col. iii. 11. and ii. 9, 10, 15, 17. ^x 2 Kings v. 13. ^y Matt. xi. 30. ^z Isa. xl. 31. ^a Prov. iii. 17.

who seek salvation by works ; for the law worketh wrath ^b. It is not the way of mount Sinai, but of Jerusalem ^c. The doubts of salvation that people meet with, arise from putting some condition of works between Christ and themselves ; as hath appeared in this discourse. But our walking in this way is by faith, which rejects such fears and doubts ^d. It is free from fears of Satan, or any evil ^e ; and free from slavish fears of perishing by our sins ^f ; faith laying hold on infinite grace, mercy, and power, to secure us : the Lord is the keeper and shade on the right hand ^g. Free and powerful grace answers all objections.

4. It is a way that is *paved with love*, like Solomon's chariot ^h. We are to set God's loving kindness and all the gifts of his love, still before our eyes ⁱ ; Christ's death, resurrection, intercession, before our eyes ; which breed peace, joy, hope, love ^k. You must believe for your justification, adoption, the gift of the Spirit, and a future inheritance ; your death and resurrection with Christ. In believing for these things, your whole way is adorned with flowers, and hath these fruits growing on each side ; so that it is through the garden of Eden, rather than the wilderness of Sinai ^l. It is the office of the Spirit or guide to be our Comforter, and not a Spirit of bondage ^m. Peace and joy are great duties in this way ⁿ. God doth not drive us on with whips and terrors

^b Rom. iv. 15. ^c Heb. xii. 18, 22. ^d John xiv. 1.
 Mark v. 36. Heb. x. 19, 22. ^e Rom. viii. 31, 32.
^f 1 John ii. 1. 2. Phil. iv. 6, 7. ^g Psal. cxxi. 5.
^h Song iii. 10. ⁱ Psal. xxvi. 2. ^k Rom. xv. 13.
 Isa. xxxv. 10. ^l Acts ix. 31. ^m Rom. viii. 15.
ⁿ Phil. iv. 4, 5, 6.

terrors, and by the rod of the Schoolmaster, the law; but leads us, and wins us to walk in his ways, by allurements °.

5. Our very *mowing, acting, walking*, in this way, is a pleasure and delight. Every good work is done with pleasure; the very labour of the way is pleasant. Carnal men wish duties were not necessary, and they are burdensome to them: but they are pleasant to us; because we do not gain holiness by our own carnal wrestling with our lusts, and crossing them, out of carnal fear, with regret and grief, and setting conscience and the law against them, to hinder their actings; but we act naturally, according to the new nature, and perform our new spiritual desires, by walking in the ways of God through Christ: and our lusts, and pleasures in sin, are not only restrained, but taken away in Christ; and pleasures in holiness freely given us, and implanted in us ^P. We have a new taste and savour, love and liking, by the Spirit of Christ; and look on the law, not as a burden, but as our privilege in Christ.

5^{thly}, It is a high exalted way, above all other ways. Unto this way the prophet Habakkuk is exalted, when, upon the failure of all visible helps and supports, he resolves to rejoice in the Lord, and joy in the God of his salvation; and, making God his strength by faith, his feet should be as hinds feet, and should walk upon his high places ¹. These are the heavenly places in Christ Jesus, that God hath

Z 4

set

° Song i. 3. Hos. xi. 3, 4. See such allurements.
2 Cor. v. 15. and vii. 1 Rom. xii. 1. ^P Rom. viii. 5.
Gal. v. 17, 24. John iv. 34. Psal. xl. 8. & cxix.
14, 16, 20. ¹ Hab. iii. 18, 19.

set us in, being quickened and raised up together with him ^r.

1. We live high here ; for we live not after the flesh, but after the Spirit, and Christ in us, with all his fulness ^s. We walk in fellowship with God dwelling in us, and walking in us ^t. And therefore our works are of higher price and excellency, than the works of others : because they are wrought in God ^u ; and are the fruits of God's Spirit ^v. And we may know, that they are accepted and good, by our gospel principles, which others have not ^x.

2. We are enabled to the most difficult duties ^y ; and nothing is too hard for us. See the great works done by faith ^z ; works that carnal men think folly and madness to venture upon, (they are so great), and honourable achievements, in doing and suffering for Christ.

3. We walk in an honourable state with God, and on honourable terms ; not as guilty creatures, to get our pardon by works ; nor as bond-servants, to earn our meat and drink : but as sons and heirs, walking towards the full possession of that happiness to which we have a title ; and so we have much boldness in God's presence ^a. We can approach nearer to God than others, and walk before him confidently, without slavish fear ; not as strangers, but as such who are of his own family ^b.

And

^r Eph. ii. 5, 6. ^s Rom. vii. 1, 2. Gal. ii. 20. & v. 25. ^t 2 Cor. vi. 16, 18. ^u John iii. 21.
^v Gal. v. 23. Phil. i. 11. ^x Rom. viii. 6. ^y Phil. iv. 1, 3. ^z Heb. 11. Mark ix. 23. ^a Gal. iv. 6, 7.
^b Eph. ii. 19, 20.

And this prompts us to do greater things than others; walking as free men ^c. It is a kingly way; the law to us is a royal law, a law of liberty, and our privilege; not a bond and yoke of compulsion.

4. It is the way only of those that are honourable and precious in the eyes of the Lord, even his elect and redeemed ones, whose special privilege it is to walk therein: no unclean beast goeth there ^d. No carnal man can walk in this way, but only those that are taught of God ^e. Nor would it have come into our hearts without divine revelation.

5. The preparing this way cost Christ very dear. It is a costly way ^f.

6. It is a good old way, wherein thou mayst follow the footsteps of all the flock.

7. It is the way to perfection. It leads to such holiness, which shall, in a while, be absolutely perfect. It differs only in the degree and manner of manifestation from the holiness of heaven: there the saints live by the same Spirit; and the same God is all in all ^g; and have the image of the same spiritual man ^h. Only here we have but the first fruits of the Spirit ⁱ; and live by faith, and not by sight ^k; and are not full grown in Christ ^l. *Sanctification* in Christ is glorification begun, as *glorification* is sanctification perfected.

T H E

^c Rom. vi. 17, 18. John viii. 35, 36. ^d Isa. xxxv. 8, 9. ^e John vi. 44, 45, 46. ^f Heb. x. 19, 20. ^g 1 Pet. iii. 18. ^h 1 Cor. xv. 28. John iv. 14. ⁱ 1 Cor. xv. 49. ^j Rom. viii. 23. ^k 2 Cor. v. 7. ^l Eph. iv. 13.

THE
D O C T R I N E
O F
J U S T I F I C A T I O N
O P E N E D and A P P L I E D.

ROM. iii. 23, 24, 25, 26.

*For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;
Being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption
that is in Jesus Christ:*

*Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation, through
faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the
remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance
of God;*

*To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness; that
he might be just, and the justifier of him which be-
lieveth in Jesus.*

THE Apostle, having confuted and overthrown
all justification, either of Jew or Gentile, by
works, in the foregoing discourse, is now
proving what he asserted ^a. “ That the righteous-
“ nefs of God without the law is manifested, being
“ witnessed by the law and the prophets; even the
“ righ-

^a verse 21, 22.

“ righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus
 “ Christ unto all, and upon all them that believe ;
 “ for there is no difference :” shewing, that, now
 in the gospel times, there is no difference between
 Jew and Gentile ; but that, in the justification of
 both, the righteousness of God without the law is
 manifested. This he proveth, by shewing what the
 gospel teacheth concerning the way of justification ;
 for the gospel only reveals the righteousness of God ^b.
 “ I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ : for
 “ therein is the righteousness of God revealed from
 “ faith to faith.

So the words are a declaration of the gospel way
 of justification by the righteousness of God ; and
 that so clearly and fully, and the benefit spoken of,
 so great and glorious, being the first benefit that we
 receive by union with Christ, and the foundation of
 all other benefits ; that my text is accounted to be
evangelium evangelii, a principal part of the written
 gospel, as briefly, and yet fully expressing this ex-
 cellent point more than any other text.

Note in the words particularly, the subject de-
 clared and explained, *viz.* justification of persons, or
 their being justified. And the meaning of it here
 is to be cleared and freed from all ambiguities
 and misunderstanding. Justification signifieth *making*
just, as sanctification is *making holy*, glorification
making glorious ; but not making just by infusion of
 grace and holiness into a person, as the Papists teach,
 confounding justification and sanctification together ;
 but making just, in trial and judgment, by a judi-
 cial

^b Rom. i. 16, 17.

cial sentence discharging guilt, freeing from blame and accusation; approving, judging, owning, and pronouncing a person to be righteous. Use alters the signification from the notation. It is a juridical word or law-term, and hath reference to trial and judgment ^c. “With me it is a very small thing, “that I should be judged of you, or of man’s judgment: yea I judge not mine own self. For I “know nothing by myself, yet am I not hereby justified: but he that judgeth me, is the Lord.” And it is so opposed to condemnation in judgment ^d. “If there be a controversy between men, and they “come unto judgment, that the judges may judge “them, then they shall justify the righteous, and “condemn the wicked^e. By thy words thou “shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be “condemned.” And it is opposed both to accusation and condemnation ^f. “Who shall lay any “thing to the charge of God’s elect? Who is he “that condemneth ^g? If I justify myself, my own “mouth shall condemn me ^h. I will maintain mine “own ways before him ⁱ. I have ordered my cause; “I know that I shall be justified ^k. Who is he that “will plead with me?” Here justification is plainly opposed to the passing sentence of condemnation ^l. “Do, and judge thy servants, condemning the wicked, to bring his way upon his head, and justifying the righteous, to give him according to “his righteousness.” In this sense it is a sin to justify

^c 1 Cor. iv. 3, 4.^d Deut. xxv. 1.^e Matt. xii.37. ^f Rom. viii. 33, 34.^g Job ix. 20.^h chap.

xiii. 15.

ⁱ verse 18.^k verse 19.^l 1 Kings

viii. 32.

justify the wicked ^m. Actions must be existent already, and brought to trial, that they may be justified ⁿ.

Justice or righteousness consists not in the intrinsic nature of an action, but in its agreeableness to a rule of judgment; so that actions are called just and righteous by an extrinsical denomination, with relation to God's rule of judging. And this righteousness appears by trying the action according to the rule, and by making an estimate of it; which estimate is either approving or disapproving, justifying or condemning, finding it to be sin, or no sin, or breach of the law. So we may say of the righteousness of persons, with reference to such habits or actings. And, because the righteousness of righteous persons appears when they are brought to trial and judgment, therefore they are said then to be in a special manner justified, as if they were then made righteous; viz. when their righteousness is declared; as Christ was said to be begotten the Son of God at the resurrection ^o; because he was then declared to be the Son of God ^p. And in the same sense, we that are adopted at present, are said to wait for our adoption, *i. e.* the manifestation of it ^q. And thus even God is said to be justified, when we judge of his actions as we ought to do, and deem them to be righteous ^r; though nothing can be added to the infinite righteousness of God. And wisdom is said to be justified of her children ^s. So justifi-

^m Isa. v. 23. Prov. xvii. 15. Job. xxvii. 5. ⁿ Job xxxiii. 32. Isa. xliii. 9, 26. ^o Acts iii. 33. ^p Rom. i. 4. ^q Rom. viii. 23. ^r Job xxxij. 2. Psal. li. 4. Luke vii. 29. ^s Matt. xi. 19.

justification is not a real change of a sinner in himself, (though a real change is annexed to it), but only a relative change with reference to God's judgment. And thus the word is used in the text, and so also in matters of judicature throughout the Scripture. Yea some contend, against the Papists, that it is no where in scripture used otherways, except by a trope borrowed from this as the proper sense. And in the text it is beyond all doubt meant of being deemed and accounted just in the sight of God; for such a justification is here only treated of, as appears in the text*. And I have been the longer explaining the sense of the word, because the mistaking it, by reason of its composition, occasioned that popish error, whereby the benefit signified by it is obscured, yea overthrown; so that we had need to contend for the sense of the word.

In the text we have,

1. The *persons justified*, (1.) Sinners. (2.) Such sinners of all sorts that shall believe, whether Jews or Gentiles.
2. The *justifier*, or efficient cause, *God*.
3. The impulsive cause, *grace*.
4. The means effecting, or material cause, the *redemption* of Christ.
5. The formal cause, the *remission* of sins.
6. The instrumental cause, *faith*.
7. The time of declaring, the *present* time.
8. The end, that God may appear *just*.

From

* Verse xix. 20;

From hence therefore will arise several useful observations, all tending to explain the nature of justification; which shall be laid down, and cleared out of the text, and confirmed particularly; and then I shall make use of them all together.

OBSERV. I. "They who are justified, are sinners, such who are come short of the glory of God," *i. e.* of God's approbation^u; of God's image of holiness^w; of eternal happiness^x.

1. The law condemns all sinners, and strikes them dead as with a thunder-bolt^y; and adjudgeth them to shame, confusion, and misery, instead of glory, and happiness, by the strict terms of it^z; which none fulfils, neither can do^a; neither Jews nor Gentiles. There is no hope, if free grace restore them not.

2. Christ came only to save sinners, and died for this end^b. "When we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly^c. This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief^d. I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance^e. The Son of man is come to save that which was lost." And God must be believed on to salvation, as a God that justifieth the ungodly; he

^u John v. 44. ^w 2 Cor. iii. 18. Eph. iv. 24.
^x 1 Thess. ii. 12. Rom. v. 2. 2 Cor. iv. 17. ^y Rom. iii. 20.
^z Rom. ii. 6--9, 11, 12. ^a Rom. viii. 7.
^b Rom. v. 6 ^c And 1 Tim. i. 15. ^d Matt. ix. 13.
^e Matt. xviii. 11.

he must believe, as one that worketh not, on him that justifieth the ungodly ^f.

OBSERV. II. "Sinners of all sorts, without difference, whether Jews or Gentiles, that believe, are the subjects of this justification." This is the scope of the Apostle, to shew, that whereas Jews and Gentiles were universally condemned by the light and law of nature, or the law written; so the righteousness of God is upon all them that believe ^g, without difference. This was a great point to be defended against the Jews in the Apostle's time, who appropriated justification to themselves, in a legal way, and to such as were profelytes to the law and circumcision; and therefore the Apostle Paul vehemently urged it ^h. And it was a point newly revealed to the Apostles, that the Gentiles might be accepted without turning Jews, and much prized as a very glorious revelation ⁱ. And it is confirmed,

1. Because, notwithstanding the Jews privilege of the law, by reason of breaking the law, they had as much need of free justification as the Gentiles, and no worthiness above the Gentiles by their works, but were rather greater sinners ^k. And, when there is equal need and worth, God might righteously justify one as well as another ^l.

2. God is the God of the Gentiles as well as of the Jews ^m; as he promised ⁿ.

3. Abra-

^f Rom. iv. 5. ^g Verse 21, 22. ^h Rom. x. 11, 12. ⁱ Acts x. 28, 45. Eph. iii. 4, 5, 8. Col. i. 25, 26, 27. ^k Rom. ii. 23, 24. ^l Rom. iii. 9. ^m Rom. iii. 29. ⁿ Rom. iv. 9, 12, 13. Gal. iii. 8. Isa. xix. 25. Zach. xiv. 9.

3. Abraham was justified before he was circumcised, that he might be the father of those that believe, tho' uncircumcised, that they might inherit the same blessing °.

4. This will appear farther, by shewing, that justification is only by faith, and without dependence upon the law, merely by the righteousness of another; and so Jews and Gentiles are alike capable of it.

OBSERV. III. "That the justifier, or efficient cause of justification, is God." It is an act of God ^p. *It is God that justifieth.* He only can justify authoritatively and irreversibly.

1. Because he is the lawgiver, and hath power to save and destroy ^q. This case concerns God's law, and can only be tried at his tribunal. He is the judge of the world ^r. It is a small worthless thing to be justified by man, or by ourselves merely ^s.

2. To him the debt of suffering for sin, and acting righteousness, is owed: and therefore he only can give a discharge for payment, or a release of the debtor ^t.

OBSERV. IV. "God justifieth souls freely by his grace, *δωρεῶν τῇ αὐτῇ χάριτι*, freely by his grace." One of these expressions had been enough; but this redoubling it sheweth the importance of the truth, to quicken our attention the more. Here is the impulsive cause of justification, and his free manner of bestowing it accordingly. And this signifies

A a

nifies

° Rom. iv. 10, 11, 12. ^p Rom. viii. 33. ^q Jam. iv. 12. ^r Gen. xviii. 25. ^s 1 Cor. iv. 3, 4. ^t Psal. li. 4. Mark ii. 7.

nifies God's free undeserved favour, in opposition to any works of our righteousness whereby it might be challenged as a debt to us^a. "Now to him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt^w. If by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace^x. By grace are ye saved, through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: not of works, lest any man should boast^y. "Who hath saved us, and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began^z. But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, &c." Grace is mercy and love shewed freely out of God's proper motion; shewing mercy because he will shew mercy; and loving us because he will love us^a. And this is confirmed,

1. Because there was not, nor is any thing in us, but what might move God to condemn us; for we have all sinned^b.

2. Because God would take away boasting, and have his grace glorified and exalted in our salvation. He will have all the praise and glory though we have the blessedness^c. "That, in the ages to come, he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace, in his kindness towards us, through Christ Jesus^d."

OBSERV.

^a Rom. iv. 4. ^w Chap. xi. 6. ^x Eph. ii. 8, 9.
^y 2 Tim. i. 9. ^z Verse 10. ^a Rom. ix. 15. ^b Eph.
 ii. 3. Ezek. xvi. 6. ^c Eph. ii. 7, 9. ^d And so
 Rom. iii. 27.

OBSERV. V. " God justifieth sinners through the
" redemption that is in Jesus Christ, whom God
" hath set forth to be a propitiation; through faith
" in his blood." This is the effecting means, or
material cause of our justification, viz. redemption
and propitiation through the blood of Christ; which
is the righteousness of God treasured up in him.

By *redemption* is meant properly such a deliver-
ance as is by paying a price; and so the words,
redeem and *redemption*, are frequently used ^e. From
this proper signification it is borrowed to signify a
deliverance without price ^f; or rather, by a meto-
nymy of the cause, put for the highest effect, the
state of glory: so that the state of glory is called
redemption, as being the completing and crowning
effect of Christ's redemption; therefore it is called
the purchased possession.

By a *propitiation* is meant that which appeaseth
the wrath of God for sin, and wins his favour. And
this propitiation of Christ is two ways typified: first,
in the propitiatory sacrifices whose blood was shed:
and 2dly, by the mercy-seat; which was called the
propitiation, because it covered the ark, wherein
was the law; and the blood of the sacrifices for
atonement was sprinkled by the high-priest before
it. And this mercy seat was a sign of God's fa-
vourableness to a sinful people, in residing among
them, and was called *mercy-seat*.

A a 2

Now,

^e Exod. xiii. 13. Numb. ii. 48, 49, 51. Lev. xxv.
24, 51, 52. Jer. xxxii. 7, 8. Neh. v. 8. ^f Luke xxi.
28. Eph. i. 14. & iv. 30. ^g Heb. ix. 5.

Now, this doctrine appears confirmed for these reasons.

I. Because Christ, by the will of God, gave himself a ransom for us, to redeem us from sin and punishment, wrath and curse ^h. *He gave himself for us, to redeem us from all iniquity*, he gave himself to death for us; was delivered for our offences; his death was the price of our redemption, that we might be justified in God's sight. God gave him up to death, he spared him not, that he might be made righteousness ⁱ. "He gave his own life
" a ransom for many: and so ^k, he bought us
" with this price ^l. He redeemed us not with silver
" and gold, but with his precious blood, as of a
" lamb without spot ^m." He suffered the penalty due to us for sin ⁿ: "He bare our sins in his own
" body on the tree ^o. "He was made a curse for
" us," and thereby redeemed us from the curse of the law: and, that he might be made a curse, he was made sin for us ^p. He subjected himself to the law, in active as well as passive obedience ^q; and obeyed his father even to death, doing and suffering at his commandment ^r; and his obedience was for our justification ^s. So Christ satisfied both for our debt of righteousness, and debt of punishment: for our faultiness, taint of sin, and want of righteousness, as well as for our guilt, and obnoxiousness to punishment; that we might be free from wrath,
and

^h Tit. ii. 14.

ⁱ 1 Cor. i. 30. & Matt. xx. 28.

^k 1 Tim. ii. 6.

^l 1 Cor. vi. 20.

^m 1 Pet. i. 18,

19. 2 Pet. ii. 1. Rev. v. 9. ⁿ 1 Pet. ii. 24. ^o Gal.

iii. 13. ^p 2 Cor. v. 21. Isa. liii. 5, 6. ^q Gal. iv. 4.

^r John xiv. 31. Heb. x. 7. ^s Compare Rom. v. 19.

with Phil. . 8, 9.

and deemed righteous in God's sight. His suffering was the consummating act of redemption; and so all is attributed to it^t; even to his blood; though other doings and sufferings concur^u. We are righteous by him, as we were guilty by Adam^w.

2. God accepted this price as a satisfaction to his justice, which he shewed in raising Christ from the dead, and so acquitting him from all our sins: "He was justified in the Spirit^x, for us^y; raised for our justification^z. It is God that justifieth: "who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen from the dead^a. "By one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified^b. This sacrifice was a sweet "smelling savour unto God." If Christ had sunk under the weight of our sins, and not been raised, the payment had not been finished, and so the debt not discharged^c, *of righteousness, because I go to my Father.*

3. This redemption is in Christ, as to the benefit of it; so that it cannot be had, except we be in Christ, and have Christ: so the text expresseth, and sheweth, that he is the propitiation; and, as so, he is our righteousness^d. We have redemption and righteousness in him^e; and therein our freedom from condemnation^f. Christ died, that his seed might be justified^g; those that are in him by spiritual generation^h.

A a 3

OBSERV.

^t Heb. ii. 9, 10. ^u 2 Cor. viii. 9. ^w Rom. v. 12. ^x 1 Tim. iii. 16. ^y Rom. iv. 25. ^z See Rom. viii. 33, 34. ^a Heb. x. 13. ^b And Eph. v. 2 ^c John xvi. 10. ^d 1 Cor. i. 30. ^e Eph. i. 7. ^f Rom. viii. 1. ^g Isa. liii. 10, 11. ^h 1 Cor. iv. 15.

OBSERV. VI. "The formal cause of justification, or that wherein it consists, is the remission of sin, *i. e.* not only the guilt and punishment is removed, but the fault; because it is a pardon grounded on justice, which clearth the fault also. By him we are justified from all things that the law charges us with ¹."

In men subject to a law, there is no middle condition between not imputing sin, and imputing righteousness: and so these terms are used as equivalent^k. "Through this man is preached the forgiveness of sins: and by him all that believe, are justified, &c. ^l. This is through the bloodshed of Christ ^m."

OBSERV. VII. "God justifieth a sinner through faith in Christ's blood." Faith is the instrumental cause of receiving this benefit, faith in the blood of Christ.

1. This *faith* is a believing on Christ, that we may be justified by himⁿ: "Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ; that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law." We believe in Christ for justification, out of a sense of our inability to obtain justification by works.

2. This

¹ Acts xiii. 39. ^k Acts xiii. 38, 39.
7, 8. 2 Cor. v. 19, 21. Rom. v. 17.
Matt. xxvi. 28. ⁿ Gal. ii. 16.

^l Rom. iv. 6.
^m Eph. i. 7.

2. This *faith* doth not justify us, as an act of righteousness, earning and procuring our justification by the work of it: for this would have been justification by works, as under the law; diametrically opposite to grace, and free gift: which excludes all consideration of any works of ours, to be our righteousness, under any denomination or diminutive terms whatever, whether you call it legal or evangelical; though you reckon it no more than the payment of a pepper-corn^o. Faith in this case is accounted a not-working^p. And it is not faith that stands instead of the righteousness of the law, but the righteousness of Christ, which satisfieth for what we ought to have done or suffered; as hath been shewed.

3. God justifieth by *faith*, as the instrument whereby we receive Christ, and his righteousness; by which we are justified properly: and we are justified by faith only metonymically, by reason the righteousness received by it; and to be justified by faith and by Christ, is all one^q. By faith we receive remission of sins^r. Its effect is, the reception of justification, not the working it; as a man may be said to be maintained by his hands, or nourished by his mouth, when those do but receive that which nourisheth, his food and drink. The cup is put for the liquor in the cup^s. Christ is in us by faith^t; received, ate, drunk^u.

A a 4

4. This

^o Rom. xi. 6. ^p Rom. iv. 5. ^q Gal. iii. 8. Rom. v. 19. ^r Acts xxvi. 18. & x. 43. ^s 1 Cor xi. 26, 27. See Rom. i. 17. & iii. 22. ^t Eph. iii. 17. ^u John i. 12. & vi. 50, 51, 53, 54.

4. This *faith* is to be understood exclusively, to all our works for justification. We defend against the Papists, justification by faith only: And there is nothing more fully expressed in scripture phrase ^w.

5. We must understand *faith* in a full sense, of receiving remission of the fault, as well as of the punishment. We believe God accounts not the fault to us of the least sin. And, where faith is said to be accounted for righteousness, it is because of the object it receives ^x. We believe, Christ's righteousness is imputed to us, as our sins are to him; or else we receive not remission of sins by believing; which is contrary to charging us with sin and condemnation: which charging signifieth imputing sin ^y. Together with the removal of the charge of sin, we receive the gift of righteousness ^z. And this we have in the reception of Christ's redemption and bloodshed ^a.

OBSERV. VIII. "That God, in setting forth
 " Christ to be a propitiation through faith in his
 " blood, aimed to declare his righteousness now
 " under the gospel, for the remission of sins that
 " are past, as well as present;" of those sins that
 were past, and committed under the old Testament, which was God's time of forbearing, in pardoning long before his justice was actually satisfied by Christ's atonement ^b. The ground of those pardons is now revealed by Christ's coming ^c:
 that

^w Rom. iii. 28. Gal. ii. 16. Phil. iii. 8, 9. Rom. iv. 16. ^x Rom. iv. 5, 6, 7, 8. 2 Cor. v. 19, 21. ^y Rom. viii. 33, 34. ^z Rom. v. 17. ^a Eph. i. 7. Matt. xxvi. 28. ^b Heb. xiii. 8. Rev. xiii. 8. Matt. xviii. 25. ^c Isa. li. 5, 6. & lvi. 1. Dan. ix. 24. 2 Tim. i. 9, 10.

that those pardons may be no blemish to the justice of God now satisfied ^d.

1. By this *righteousness* is meant that righteousness of God mentioned in the proposition ^e; of which the Text is but a confirmation; viz. the righteousness of God: not his essential righteousness, that which is an essential property of God; but a righteousness, which is upon all them that believe; Christ's righteousness, which is the end of the law ^f; and therefore called God's righteousness; that which Christ wrought for us, which is given to us, and we receive by faith; that whereby Christ answered the law for us; by which, as the price, he redeemed us; which is called God's righteousness, because it is of God's working, and it only hath God's acceptance and approbation; as Christ is called the Lamb of God, because God provided him, and accepts him as an offering ^g. Upon the like account, Christ's kingdom is called the kingdom of God, because God's own hand sets it up, and maintains it, and rules it ^h. Christ, who became obedient to death, to work this righteousness, was God as well as man ⁱ. And this is that righteousness which the apostle opposeth to his own; that which is in Christ; which he had through faith. And this is the righteousness of God here, and in other places; the righteousness which is of God by faith ^k.

2. God aimed at declaring, in gospel times his righteousness in forgiving sins past, in the time of God's forbearance under the Old Testament ^l; and also

^d Exod. xxxiv. 7. Psal. lxxxv. 10. ^e Rom. iii. 21, 22. ^f Rom. x. 3, 4. ^g John i. 29. ^h Eph. v. 5. ⁱ Phil. ii. 6, 8. ^k Phil. iii. 9. ^l Rom. iii. 25.

also in justifying those that believe in Christ at present : for it was by the righteousness of the same Christ, that sins were pardoned under the Old Testament as well as now ^m. Christ was the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world ⁿ ; only the righteousness was not actually fulfilled, and revealed then, but it was shadowed out then, by the sacrifices, ransoms, redemptions, &c. ^o. So this was a time of God's forbearance ; because he pardoned sins, as it were without present payment and satisfaction. He had patience, and did not exact the debt, until Christ paid all ^p. But then God promised, that he would reveal his righteousness in due time ^q. And this he hath done by the appearance of Christ ^r.

OBSERV. IX. “ The end of this manifestation is, “ that God may appear just, in forgiving sins past “ as well as present ; and the justifier of him that “ believeth in Jesus.” Here, the essential property of God is exalted, and appears glorious, in justifying by the forementioned righteousness of God.

1. As God justifieth freely by grace, he would appear hereby just in justifying sinners ; for it would be a blemish to God's justice, to forgive without a satisfaction, and righteousness performed : and therefore though he be gracious and merciful, yet he will not clear the guilty ^s. And so the saints of God concluded, that God had a righteousness and redemption whereby he forgave sin, though it was not

^m Heb. xiii. 8. ⁿ Rev. xiii. 8. ^o Heb. x. 1, 2, 3, 9, 10. ^p Matt. xvii. 26. ^q Isa. lvi. 1. & li. 5, 6. Psal. xcvi. 2. Dan. ix. 24. ^r 2 Tim. i. 10. ^s Exod. xxxiv. 7. Gen. xviii. 25. Exod. xxiii. 7.

not then revealed ^t. God would have justice and mercy to meet in our salvation ^u.

2. God would have it appear, that he only is just, and therefore saveth us, not by our own righteousness, but by his, which is indeed the more exalted by our unrighteousness occasionally, though God is not therefore unrighteous in taking vengeance ^v.

3. God would appear to be the only procurer and worker of our righteousness, and so our justifier by way of procurement, as well as by way of judgment; and so he will justify us by a righteousness of his own, and not by our own ^x; that we may glory in the Lord only ^y.

USE I. *It serves for instruction, by way of encouragement and consolation*; that the great happiness of those that are in Christ, is that their sins are forgiven, and they accounted just in the sight of the Judge of all the world, through the redemption that is by the blood of Christ; and this benefit contains all blessedness of life, and the consequences thereof ^z. That man unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works, hath a blessedness therein, and such an extensive blessedness, in regard of the spiritual part, as Abraham had, comprehending all spiritual blessings in Christ: For they which be of faith, are blessed with faithful Abraham ^a. For this righteousness being the fundamental blessing, is revealed from faith to faith, and they that are by faith

^t Psal. li. 14. cxxx. 7, 8, and cxliii. 1, 2. ^u Psal. lxxxv. 10. ^v Rom. iii. 5. ^w Dan. ix. 7. ^x Isa. liv. 17. & xlv. 22, 24, 25. ^y 1 Cor. i. 30, 31. ^z Rom. iv. 6. ^a Gal. iii. 9.

faith just and justified through that righteousness do live by faith always receiving it, and receiving nourishment and comfort by it ^b.

1. They are delivered from the charge of sin and fault before God ^c. *Τίς ἐγκαλέσει;* "Who shall lay any thing to their charge, or be suffered to bring in, at God's tribunal, any indictment, charge, or accusation against them? It is God that justifieth them; and Christ hath died, and rose again. They are redeemed from among men, being the first fruits to God and the Lamb. In their mouth there is no guile, and they are without fault (*ἁμερμῆς*) before the throne of God ^d."

3. They are delivered from all condemnation in sentence and execution; the curse and wrath of God ^e. "Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us ^f. Jesus which delivered us from the wrath to come ^g. Thou hast taken away all thy wrath: thou hast turned thyself from the fierceness of thine anger ^h." The wrath of God is an insupportable burden, and the foundation of all miseries; which foundation is razed, and a foundation of blessedness laid, whereby we have peace with God, and are fully reconciled to God ⁱ. You that were sometime alienated, and "enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled, in the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable, and unreprouvable in his sight."

Now,

^b Rom. i. 17. ^c Rom. viii. 33, 34. ^d Rev. xiv. 4, 5. See also Col. i. 22. ^e Gal. iii. 13.
^f 1 Thess. i. 10. ^g Psal. lxxxv. 3. ^h See verse 5, 6. ⁱ Rom. v. 1, 2. 2 Cor. v. 18, 19. Col. i. 21, 22.

Now, where there is no blame before God, there can be no wrath from God.

3. They have no need to seek salvation by the works of the law; and so are delivered from a yoke that cannot be borne; from endless observances that Pharisees and Papists have heaped up; from continual frights, doubts, fears and terrors, by the law^k; from a wrath-working law^l; from a sin irritating law^m; from a killing law, administration of death and condemnationⁿ; mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage^o.

4. Hence, they are delivered from a condemning conscience, which otherwise would still gnaw them as a worm^p. "If the blood of bulls and of goats, and ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh; how much more shall the blood of Christ, who, through the eternal Spirit, offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works, to serve the living God." A guilty conscience is a foul conscience; and it will make all services and duties dead works, unfit for the service of the living God: it is the blood of Christ applied by faith, that takes off this foulness of guilt from the conscience: therefore the blood of Christ hath the only efficacy this way, to take off the conscience of sin^q. Hence they come to have a good conscience^r; void of offence towards God^s.

5. It

^k Acts xv. 10. Rom. viii. 15. ^l Rom. iv. 15.
^m Rom. vii. 5. ⁿ 2 Cor. iii. 6, 7, 9. ^o Gal. iv. 24.
^p Heb. ix. 14. ^q Heb. x. 1, 2, 3, 4, &c. ^r 1 Pet. iii. 21.
^s Acts xxiv. 16.

5. It is an everlasting righteousness; by which their standing in Christ is secured ¹. It is an eternal redemption that is obtained ². Whereas, by the law, those that were justified to day typically, might fall under condemnation, so far as to need another sacrifice for sin, tomorrow: they had no real purgation of conscience from sin by those sacrifices; and therefore could not have a lasting delivery of their consciences from guilt by them. Here it is far otherwise: here is an effectual, complete, and perpetual redemption, reaching the conscience of the sinner, and for the purging away all sins past, present, and to come ³.

6. It is a righteousness of infinite value; because it is the righteousness of one that is God: and his name is, JEHOVAH OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS ⁴. It is therefore more powerful to save, than Adam's sin was to destroy or condemn ⁵. Christ is here the power of God ⁶. Hence we are powerful, and conquer, by faith. Likewise there is a marvellous plenty of mercy and grace, that is brought to us by JEHOVAH *our righteousness*, plenteous redemption ⁷. It must be most plentiful, because infinite. Though no creature could satisfy for sin, yet JEHOVAH could do it abundantly; and therefore in Christ, God's mercy prevails high above our sins ⁸.

7. God's Grace and justice are both engaged on our behalf in this righteousness. Justice is terrible, and seems to be against mercy, and dreadful to

natural

¹ Dan. ix. 24. ² Heb. ix. 12. ³ 1 John i. 7.
⁴ Jer. xxiii. 6. Heb. ix. 14. ⁵ Rom. v. ⁶ 1 Cor.
⁷ 24. ⁸ Psal. cxxx. 7. ⁹ Psal. ciii. 11, 12.

natural people; but it is otherwise to believers; it is pacified and appeased through this righteousness; it is satisfied by Christ for our sins. Justice becomes our friend, joins in with grace, and, instead of pleading against us, it is altogether for us; and it speaks contrary to what it speaks to sinners out of Christ^c. We may also plead Justice for forgiveness through mercy in Christ^d.

8. We may be sure of holiness and glory, of delivery from the power and dominion of sin, as well as the charge of it before God, and guilt in our own consciences: for this was the end of Christ's death^e, *Whom he justified, them he also glorified*. The law was the strength of sin; for sin had its title to rule in us by reason of the curse; and thence Satan, also rules: but here is our deliverance from sin and Satan, yea from death too^f. And, by the same reason, we are raised, by this excellent righteousness, to a better state than we had in Adam at first; for Christ died that we might receive the adoption of sons, and the Spirit; that we might be brought under a new covenant, and be set in the right way of holiness, serving out of love^g.

9. We may be sure, hence, of a concurrence of all things for our good. All things shall work for good, through grace, to bring us to glory; because God is for us, who is the creator and governor of all things^h. God will never be wroth with us, nor rebuke us in anger any moreⁱ.

10. Hence,

^c Josh. xxiv. 19, 20. ^d Rom. iii. 26. ^e Tit. ii. 14. ^f Rom. vi. 14. & viii. 3, 4, 30. ^g Heb. ii. 14, 15. ^h Gal. iii. 14. ⁱ John iv. 19. ^j Gal. iv. 5. ^k Heb. ix. 15. ^l Rom. v. 11. ^m Luke i. 74. ⁿ Col. ii. 13. ^o Rom. viii. 28, 31, 33. ^p Isa. liv. 9. ^q Rom. v. 2—5.

10. Hence, we may come before God without confusion of face; yea with boldness to the throne of Grace in Christ's name^k; and expect all good things from him^l. "In whom we have boldness" and access with confidence by the faith of him^m. "Let us draw near with full assurance of faith." Christ's blood pleads for us in heavenⁿ; and we may, and are to plead boldly a satisfaction on his account.

11. We live in those times when this righteousness is fully revealed, and sin made an end of. This is our happiness above those that lived before Christ's coming, who were under types and shadows of this righteousness; when as we have the substance in its own light; and so we are not under the law, which they were under as a school-master. We are not servants, but sons, called to liberty^p. The preaching the old covenant as a church ordinance to be urged, now is ceased: the law is not to be preached now in the same terms as Moses preached it, for justification^q; it is contrary in terms to faith, though it were subservient.

USE II. *For examination, whether we be in Christ, and have received this justification by faith with all our hearts.*

I. Consider, whether you be made really sensible of sin, and your condemnation by the law. This is necessary to make us fly to Christ: and for this,

as

^k John xiv. 13, 14. ^l Eph. iii. 12. ^m Heb. x. 22, 23. ⁿ Heb. xii. 24. ^o Rom. iii. 21, 22.
^p Gal. iii. 23, 26. iv. 7. & v. 13. ^q Rom. x. 5, 6, 7, 8. 2 Cor. iii. 6, 7. Gal. iii. 12, 24.

as one great end, was the law given^r. Without sense of sin, there will be no prizing of Christ, or desire of holiness; but rather abuse of grace to carnal security and licentiousness. Those that were stung with the fiery serpents, looked up to the brazen serpent.

2. Dost thou trust only upon free mercy for justification in God's sight, renouncing all thy works whatever in this point, as not able to stand in them before God's exact justice crying mercy with the poor publican? Perfectionists, and self-righteous persons, have no share in this matter^s. Paul, notwithstanding all that the world might think he had to plead for himself, "counted all but dung, "that he might win Christ, and be found in him, "not having his own righteousness, which is of the "law, but that which is through the faith of "Christ, the righteousness which is of God by "faith; *i. e.* the redeeming and propitiation righteousness of Christ; whereby he desired only to be justified; and which he believed in for that end, opposing it to any thing inherent in himself; which therefore he calls his own righteousness^t.

3. Dost thou trust with any confidence on Christ, not continuing in a mere suspense? In a way of mere doubting, we can receive no good thing from God^u. Mere doubting will not loose the conscience from the guilt of sin^w; but leaveth the soul under terrors. Abraham's confidence is the example and pattern of our justifying faith, that we should en-

B b

deavour

^r Gal. iii. 22, 23, 24. Matt. ix. 13. Acts ii. 37.
^s Luke xviii. 13, 14. ^t Phil. iii. 7, 8, 9. Rom. iv. 5.
^u Jam. i. 6, 7. ^w Heb. x. 22.

deavour to come up unto, believing with a fullness of persuasion, in hope against hope^x. Though a believing soul may be assaulted with many doubtings, yet it fights against them, and doth not give up itself to the dominion of them^y. It hath always something contrary to them, and striving with them.

4. Dost thou come to Christ for remission of sins, for the right end, namely, that thou mayst be freed from the dominion of sin before the living God^z? If otherwise, thou dost not receive it for the right end; and desirest not really the favour and enjoyment of God, and to be in friendship with him.

5. Dost thou walk in holiness, and strive to evidence this justification by the fruits of faith, in good works? If otherwise, thy faith is but a dead faith; for a true faith purifieth the heart^a. If Christ be thine, he will be sanctification as well as righteousness^b. If God hath taken thee into his favour, he will doubtless cleanse thee. Though faith alone justifies, without the concurrence of works to the act of justification, yet that faith is not so alone as not to be accompanied with good works; as the eye alone seeth, yet it is not alone without other members. So the apostle James declareth faith that is alone to be dead, and biddeth us shew our faith by our works; which is to be understood, not as if works were the conditions of attaining
justifi-

^x Rom. iv. 20, 24. ^y Psal. xlii. 11. Mark ix. 24.

^z Heb. ix. 14. Psal. cxxx. Tit. ii. 14. 1 Pet. ii. 24.

^a Acts xv. 9. ^b 1 Cor. i. 30. Rom. viii. 1, 9. John xiii. 8.

justification, but sure evidences of justification attained by faith, and very necessary ^c. The gospel is no covenant of works requiring another righteousness for justification by doing for life. Works justify us from such accusations of men as will deny us to have justification by faith, or that we have a true and lively faith, or are good trees ^d; not as being our righteousness themselves, or conditions of our having Christ's righteousness, or qualifying us for it.

USE III. *It serveth for exhortation to several duties.*

I. To the *wicked*. It is dehortation unto them from continuance in sin, under God's wrath, running headlong to damnation; for here is a door of mercy opened to them; a righteousness prepared, that they may be freely accepted of God. Some men are desperadoes: "They have loved strangers, and after them they will go ^e." They are resolved to run the risk of it, and please themselves, that they shall speed as well as others. And some men would be justified, but seek for it in a wrong way. Some will go to the pope, to quiet their consciences by his deceits; some to their own works and performances: but you are exhorted to look out for the true righteousness. Christ saith, in the gospel, *Behold me, Behold me*; the kingdom of heaven is open; mercy and righteousness are freely offered ^f. Repentance is preached with remission of

B b 2

sins.

^c Jam. ii. 14, 15: ^d Matt. xii. 33, 37. ^e Jer. ii. 25. ^f Isa. lv. 6, 7. Jer. iii. 12.

sins ^g. Beware you do not neglect this acceptable time, this day of salvation ^h. For,

(1.) If you do, you remain under the wrath of God ⁱ; under the curse of the law; which, like a flood, sweeps away all that are found out of this ark, the Lord Jesus Christ ^k.

(2.) Your condemnation will be aggravated by refusing so great salvation ^l. You will have no cloke for your sins, when you refuse mercy ^m. You cannot say, you are undone, by your past sins, beyond recovery, and therefore it is in vain to strive; for, behold remission of sins is proclaimed unto you ⁿ. And what a horrid sin is it, to despise the blood of the Son of God ^o?

OBJECT. I. "If God justify the ungodly ^p,
" what need I forsake ungodliness at all ^q."

ANS. Thou canst not seek justification truly, except thou hast a mind to live to God in friendship with him; for justification is God's way of taking us into friendship with him ^r; and of reconciling us ^s. The use thou art to make of it, is, to seek God's friendship by it, and the enjoyment of him. Why doth a man seek a pardon if he intend to go on in rebellion, and stand out in defiance to his prince ^t? They seek pardon in a mocking way, that intend not to return to obedience ^u.

OBJECT.

^g Luke xxiv. 57. Acts ii. 38. ^h Heb. ii. 1, 3.
ⁱ John iii. 36. ^k Psal. xi. 5, 6. ^l Heb. ii. 3.
^m John xv. 22. ⁿ Ezek. xxxiii. 10, 11. ^o John
 iii. 18, 36. ^p Rom. iv. 5. ^q Rom. vi. 1. ^r Rom.
 v. 1, 2. ^s 2 Cor. v. 19. ^t 1 Pet. ii. 24. ^u Gal.
 vi. 7, 8.

OBJECT. II. "My sins are so great, that I have
"no encouragement to hope."

ANS. Christ's righteousness is for all sorts of sinners that believe, whether Jews or Gentiles; and how great sinners were of both sorts^w; and even for those that killed and murdered the Lord of glory^x; for the chief of sinners^y. *Where sin abounds, grace superabounds^z*. Your sins are but the sins of a creature, but his righteousness is the righteousness of God^a.

EXHORT. II. It exhorts those that have a mind to turn to God, to turn the right way, by faith in Christ for justification. Let them not seek by works, as most in the world do, and all are prone to do^b. But this doctrine seems very foolish, yea pernicious to a natural man. "Become a fool, that thou mayest
"be wise^c;" otherwise you will labour in the fire, and weary yourselves for very vanity, and be under continual discomforts and discouragements: for you can do no good work while you are in the flesh, under the law, and its curse, before God have received you into favour; for justification is in order of nature before true holiness of heart and life^d. Faith is the great work and mother duty^e; and therefore while you believe not, you dishonour Christ and his death^f. Therefore come boldly, though

B b 3

you

^w Rom. i. ii. & iii. ^x Acts ii. 23, 36. ^y 1 Cor. ii. 8.
^y 1 Tim. i. 15. ^z Rom. v. 20. ^a John vi.
37. ^b Rom. ix. 31, 32. ^c 1 Cor.
iii. 18. ^d 1 Tim. i. 5. ^e Heb. ix. 14. ^f John vi.
29. Gal. v. 6. ^f Gal. ii. 21. & v. 2, 4.

you have been a great sinner ^z; and seek righteousness in Christ with holiness ^b.

Q. But how shall I get faith?

A. Faith is the gift of God ⁱ; and by the Gospel ^k. Faith cometh by hearing the gospel preached ^l; and that comes, in working faith, not in word only, but in power ^m; beyond what can be done by natural or human attainment ⁿ. Therefore, if thou hast no beginning of it in thee, thy only way is, to attend to the gospel, and to meditate on thy sin and misery, and Christ's excellency, that so thou mayest be inclined in thy heart to believe ^o; for this is the way God useth to beget faith ^p. But, if thou hast a desire and inclination to fly from thyself to Christ in the bent of thy heart, so that thou preferrest Christ above all, then the Spirit hath begun, and will carry on the work; so that now thou mayest pray confidently for faith ^q.

OBJECT. III. "But without holiness no man shall see the Lord ^r. And how shall I get holiness? I cannot sanctify myself; and this confidence you speak of, may slacken my diligence."

ANS. If thou hast righteousness in Christ, God will make thee holy: and this confidence is the only way to get holiness, because of that righteousness ^s.

The

^z Acts x. 43. ^b Rom. viii. 1. ⁱ Eph. ii. 8.
^k Rom. i. 15, 16, 17. ^l Rom. x. 17. ^m 1 Thess.
i. 5. ⁿ John vi. 63. ^o Song i. 3. Gal. ii. 16.
Psal. ix. 10. ^p Isa. lv. 4. ^q Song i. 4. Luke xi.
13. Mark ix. 24. ^r Heb. xii. 14. ^s Rom.
v. 21.

The new covenant is confirmed in him, which promifeth a new heart. If fin be forgiven, thou fhalt be delivered from its power, and quickened by the fame death and refurrection of Chrift, whereby thou art juftified :

EXHORT. III. It exhorteth them that are juftified by faith,

1. *To walk humbly*, as being nothing of themfelves; to acknowledge themfelves enemies to God by nature, and acknowledge their fins in the greatness and heinoufnefs of them; that they are faved freely by the righteousnefs of another, not by their own; yea that they are fo far fallen, that the juftice of God would have been againft them, if it had not been fatisfiedⁿ; but now they fee that Chrift hath fatisfied, and his righteousnefs is above their fins^w.

2. *To praise and glorify God through Chrift for his grace.* Oh! what abundant grace and love appears in God's wafhing and cleansing us by his Son's blood^x; and in making his Son fin and a curfe for us^y? And what a glorious and excellent righteousnefs hath God given us in Chrift^z?

3. *To walk comfortably*, upon the account of this righteousnefs^a. Triumph over fin and affliction^b. Be confident in expecting great things from God^c; for, though you may be unworthy, and grace will

B b 4

fhew

^{*} Col. ii. 12, 13.

^w Ezek. xxxvi. 31.

^x Rev. i. 5. Gal. ii. 20.

^y Rom.

v. 5, 8. 1 John iv. 9, 10. & iii. 16.

^z 2 Cor. viii. 9.

^a Ifa. lxi. 10.

^b Ifa. xl. 1, 2.

^c Rom. viii. 33.

39. ^c Heb. x. 22.

shew you your own unworthiness, yet you stand upon the righteousness of Christ. Glory in the hope of God's glory; for, if Christ died to reconcile you when you were enemies, much more will he save you by his life, now you are reconciled^d. Ask boldly for what you want; for God is in Christ's manhood as the mercy-seat. Whenever sin stings you, and objections trouble you, look to the brazen serpent; confess sin, and trust for pardon; meditate on Christ's righteousness, and the abundance of grace in him^e. If you find never so much ungodliness, no good qualifications; yet Christ is at hand for your comfort^f. In all your sins, apply yourselves to this fountain^g. If sin lie on the conscience, it weakens peace and spiritual strength. Lie not under guilt with a slavish fear; you have a righteousness to deliver you from it; apply it by faith, that you may have no more conscience of sin as condemning^h. You have a better righteousness than any perfectionists can have.

4. Hold fast this way of justification, notwithstanding all the noise that is made in the world against it; for the devil will strive to scare you out of it, or steal it from you; as he did from the Jews, from the *Catharists*, the *Papists*, and many *Protestants*ⁱ. And the apostle reckons it is by a spiritual bewitchery. He will strive to get you to trust on works, and tell you, it is for the promoting of holiness,

^d Rom. v. 3, 10.^e Rom. viii. 32.^f Isa. l. 10.^g Thess. ii. 16. 17.^h Zech. xiii. 1.ⁱ John i. 7.^j Heb. x. 2. Psal. xxxii.^k Gal. i. 6.

liness, and to trust on works to get Christ, and to lay works lowest in the foundation. If you lose this righteousness of Christ, under any colour or pretence whatever, you lose all ^k. Do not so dishonour Christ, as to think of procuring that by works which you have fully in Christ. Think not that the gospel requires another justification to gain this : for the gospel is no legal covenant, but a declaration of the righteousness of faith ; and we, being justified, are heirs by adoption and promise ^l. This is the doctrine which glorifieth God, and abaseth the creature ; which is a great mark of its truth. Beware, therefore, of carnal reason ; which will go quite contrary, and make Christ's righteousness a stumbling-stone to thee ^m.

5. *Walk as one that enjoys the favour of God in Christ.* Let him have the honour of it. Walk therefore in holiness, knowing by what price you are redeemed ⁿ. Love God that hath loved you first ^o. Believe that God will enable you for the practice of holiness ^p. Particularly, walk in love to the saints ; exercise forgiveness to your enemies. Sense of your own sins, and God's forgiving you, will cause you to pity and forgive others, else you cannot pray or trust for forgiveness of your own sins upon reasonable grounds ^q. Desire grace may be exalted upon others ;
and

^k Gal. v. 2, 3. ^l Gal. iii. 24, 25, 26. & iv. 7.
^m 1 Pet. ii. 8. Rom. ix. 32, 33. ⁿ 1 Pet. i. 17, 18.
² Cor. v. 14, 15. ² Pet. i. 5, 11. 1 Cor. vi. 20.
^o 1 John iv. 19. Psal. cxvi. 16. ^p Rom. vi. 14.
^q Eph. iv. 31, 32. Matt. vi. 14, 15. & xviii.
21.

378 *The Doctrine of Justification, &c.*

and wait patiently for the full declaration of justification at the great day^r; for here your justification is known only by faith; but in outward things, you are dealt with as a sinner: then your righteousness shall appear openly, and you shall be dealt with according to it.

^r Gal. v. 5. Acts iii. 19.

15 SE 62

A

A T A B L E

O F T H E T E X T S

More or less illustrated in this Work.

Chap.	Ver.	Page
GENESIS		
II	17	85, 96, 68
JOB		
I	3	27
ECCL.		
VII	16 29	276
ISAIAH.		
XXXVIII	3	308
L	10	70, 177, 199, 376
JEREM.		
XXXI	29, 30	89
HOSEA		
XI	4	34, 161
MATT.		

TEXTS *illustrated*

Chap:	Ver.	Page
-------	------	------

MATT.

V	12	112
VI	12, 15	137
IX	14	319
XXII	11	

MARK

I	15	134
---	----	-----

LUKE

XIII	24	36, 212
XIV	21, 23	231

JOHN

I	16	48
---	----	----

ACTS

XIII	33	
------	----	--

ROM.

I	5	110, 202
II	6	110
III	25	361
IV	5	101
VII	1	344
	6	149, 309
VIII	3	244
	8	82
	23	56

ROM.

TEXTS *illustrated.*

Chap.	Ver.	Page
ROM.		
XIII	4	
I COR.		
XI	29	301
2 COR.		
VIII	12	89
XIII	5	88, 289, 338
EPHES.		
I	3	47, 251, 313
	10	58
	13	187
II	5, 6	53, 334
	20	265
IV	22	83, 243
VI	18	305, 314
I TIM.		
I	8	263
II	8	309, 310
HEB.		
X	10, 14, 18	29
	22	228, 369, 375
XII	17	220
JAMES		
II	14, 15	371 JAMES

TEXTS *illustrated.*

Chap.	Ver.	Page
JAMES		
II	24	III
I JOHN		
I	3	
III	9	248, 338, 339
REVELAT.		
XXII	12, 14	112

F I N I S

15 SE 62

A CATALOGUE of BOOKS sold by
JOSEPH JOHNSON, BOOKSELLER and
STATIONER, at *Mead's Head*, opposite the
Monument, London.

- 1 **A**CCOUNT of the Earthquake at Lima, 8vo
- 2 Assembly's Catechism, with or without Proofs
- 3 Ainsworth, Bailey, Boyer, Cole, and Dyche's Dict.
- 4 Advice to a Son, 12mo
- 5 Auther's Poems on divine Subjects
- 6 Arndt's true Christianity, 3 vol. 8vo
- 7 Adventures of Gil Blas, 4 vol.
- 8 Boyer's wife and ingenious Companion, Fr. & Eng.
- 9 Butler on the Management of Bees, 12mo
- 10 Baxter's Works
- 11 Bunyan's Works
- 12 Boehm's Discourses, 8vo
- 13 Boerhaave's Institutions, 8vo
- 14 Bailey's Household Dictionary, 8vo
- 15 Barrow's geometrical Lectures, 8vo
- 16 ——— mathematical Lectures, 8vo
- 17 Bennett on the Inspiration of the Scriptures, 8vo
- 18 Bradbury on Baptism, 8vo
- 19 Baker's Medulla Poetarum, 2 vol. 8vo
- 20 Battie's Isocrates, 8vo
- 21 Baptist's Confession of Faith, 12mo
- 22 Burkitt's poor Man's Help, and young Man's Guide
- 23 ——— Annotations on the New Testament, Folio
- 24 Clarke's Sermons, 8vo
- 25 Collet on Divine Providence, 8vo
- 26 Compendious History of the Reformation, 8vo
- 27 Collins on Reason, 8vo
- 28 Coles on God's Sovereignty, 8vo
- 29 Castro's Portuguese Grammar, 8vo
- 30 Complete Letter Writer, 12mo
- 31 Closet Religion, the Necessity and Advantage thereof
- 32 Cambridge Concordance, 12mo
- 33 Conduct of a Married Life, 12mo
- 33 *Davis's Hymns, recommended by Dr. Gill
- 34 Dyche's Particles, 12mo
- 35 Dodderidge's Rise and Progress of Religion in the Soul
- 36 Delaune's Plea for the Nonconformists, 8vo
- 37 Denlop's Sermons, 2 vol. 12mo
- 38 Discourses on Reading the Scriptures, 12mo
- 39 Equation of Time, 4to

Books Sold by J. JOHNSON.

- 40 Transcendent Excellency of Jesus Christ, 12mo
- 41 Experienced Angler, 12mo
- 42 Epictetus, Latin, 12mo
- 43 Erskine's Sermons, 3 vol. 8vo
- 44 ——— Gospel Sonnets, 12mo
- 45 Explanation of the Assembly's Catechism, 12mo
- 46 Dr. Foster on Fundamentals in Religion, 8vo
- 47 Flavel's Works
- 48 Foot on Baptism, 12mo
- 49 Fleetwood's relative Duties, 8vo
- 50 Friend's History of Physic, 2 vol. 8vo
- 51 ——— on Fevers, 8vo
- 52 ——— on Chemistry, 8vo
- 53 Dr. Gill's Expositions, Fol. and 4to
- 54 ——— on the five Points, 4 vol. 8vo
- 55 ——— on the Prophecies of the Old Testament, 8vo
- 56 Gale against Wall on Infant Baptism, 8vo
- 57 ———'s Sermons, 4 vol. 8vo
- 58 Gilpin on Satan's Temptations, 8vo
- 59 Grove on a future State, 8vo
- 60 Gibbons's hidden Life of a Christian, 12mo
- 61 Greek Particles englished, 12mo.
- 62 Gouge's Word to Saints and Sinners, 12mo
- 63 Hervey's Dialogues and Meditations
- 64 Hurion on Christ crucified, 8vo
- 65 ——— on Christ glorified, 8vo
- 66 Hooke's posthumous Works, Folio
- 67 Horace, and all the Classics, various Editions
- 68 Hutcheson's Treatise on the Ideas of Beauty and Virtue
- 69 Dr. Harris on the Globe, 12mo
- 70 ——— Algebra, 12mo
- 71 Mr. Matt. Henry's Hymns, 12mo
- 72 Monf. de la Hire's Conic Sections, 8vo
- 73 Howe's Sermons, 8vo. Hodius de Textibus, Folio
- 74 Heister's Surgery, 4to. Halley's Apollonius, 8vo
- 75 Howe's Sufficiency of the Spirit's Teaching without
human Learning, 4to
- 76 Hooker's poor doubting Christians brought to Christ
- 77 Human Prudence
- 78 Dr. Jennings against Taylor on Atonement
- 79 Jacob's Law Dictionary abridged, 8vo
- 80 Jackson's Question about Faith in Christ answered
- 81 Johnson's unbloody Sacrifice, 8vo
- 82 Introduction to Psalmody, 12mo

Books Sold by J. JOHNSON.

- 83 Infincere Professor and real Christian delineated
- 84 Hill's, Fennings, Fisher's, and Webster's Arithmetic
- 85 Keach's spiritual Songs, 12mo
- 86 ——— Child's Delight, 12mo
- 87 Leoni's Palladio, Folio
- 88 Dr. Linden's Essay on Chalybeat Waters, 8vo.
- 89 Lay Nonconformity defended, 8vo
- 90 Library of the Law, 8vo.
- 91 Lenfant's Introd. to a new Version of the Testament
- 92 ——— Version of St. Matthew, 4to
- 93 Letters from Europe and the East
- 94 Laud's Remains, Fol. Life of Mr. John Cowe
- 95 Law Grammar, Fol. L'Estrange's Josephus
- 96 Langley's Geometry. Lucas's spiritual Combat.
- 97 Laws relating to Estates
- 98 Mr. Marshall's Gospel Mystery of Sanctification, recommended by Mr. Hervey
- 99 Moral Philosopher, 3 vol. 8vo. Miller's Chemistry
- 100 Memoirs of a Protestant condemned to the Gallies for his Religion, 2 vol. 12mo
- 101 Mason's Short-hand, and Variety of other Books in Short-hand
- 102 Monro's Institutes of Education. 2 vol. 8vo
- 103 Mead's medical Precepts and his other Pieces
- 104 Marryatt's exalted Saviour
- 105 Nelson's Lex Maneriorum
- 106 Nepos in English, by Finch
- 107 Notcutt on the Covenant. Owen's Works
- 108 Pomfret's Directory for Youth, 12mo
- 109 Pointer's Oxford. Ditto on the Weather
- 110 Petronius Arbiter, Latin.
- 111 Pierce on the Eucharist, 8vo
- 112 Pastor Fido, in Italian and English, 12mo
- 113 Reasons for Dissenting, 8vo. Reeve's Hymns, 12mo
- 114 Reynolds's Letter to a Deist, 8vo
- 115 Rose's Translation of Sallust, 8vo
- 116 Salmon's geographical Grammar and Gazetteer
- 117 Saltmarsh on Free Grace, 12mo
- 118 Shining Convert, 8vo. Shuttleworth's Opticks, 8vo
- 119 Sherlock's Catechism, 12mo
- 120 Scott's Christian Life, 5 vol. 8vo
- 121 Sherlock on Death, Judgment, and a future State
- 122 Stennett's Hymns, 12mo

Books Sold by J. JOHNSON:

- 123 Skepp's divine Energy, recommended by Dr. Gill
- 124 Dr. Stennett's Sermons
- 125 Shaw's Summary of the Bible, 12mo
- 126 Shakespear's Works
- 127 Spectator, Tatler, and Guardian
- 128 Mrs. Seymour on Education
- 129 Trial of the Regicides, for murdering K. Charles
- 130 Tallent's chronological Tables, Folio
- 131 Tea, a Poem, 4to. Taylor on Grace, 12mo
- 132 Tillotson's Sermons, Folio, 8vo & 18vo
- 133 Taylor on the Trinity, 8vo
- 134 Ditto on Justification, 8vo. Ditto on Baptism, 12mo
- 135 Vindication of Dr. Gill, 8vo
- 136 Vincent on Prayer, 12mo
- 137 ——— on the Catechism, 12mo
- 138 Abp. Wake on Death, 12mo
- 139 Dr. Watts's Works, 6 vol. or any of his Pieces single
- 140 Dr. Whitby on the five Points, 8vo
- 141 Wheatly on the Common Prayer, 8vo
- 142 Dr. Ward's Essays on the English Language
- 143 Wilfon's Sermons, 8vo
- 144 ——— Scripture Manuel, 8vo
- 145 Worsley on the Classics, 12mo
- 146 Bp. Wilkins on Prayer and Preaching, 8vo
- 147 Dr. Wright of Self-Possession, 12mo
- 148 ——— Occasional Preacher, 8vo
- 149 ——— Great Concern of human Life, 8vo
- 150 Watfon on Animals, 8vo
- 151 Youth directed and instructed, 12mo
- 152 Young Man's Companion, by Fisher, Mather, Wife,
and Gordon.

In the Press and speedily will be published,
A New Edition of Tomkins's Mediator.

Of the said JOSEPH JOHNSON may be had all Sorts of
Bibles, Testaments, Common-Prayers, and School
Books: Books in Navigation, and all other Arts and
Sciences: both new and second-hand. Also Stationary
Wares of all Sorts.

15 SE 62

N. B. The full Value given for Libraries and Parcels of
old Books.

es

zmo

ingle

o

r, Wife,

d,

Sorts of
School
Arts and
Stationary

Parcels of